

RGVEDIC INDIA

*Cultural History of India
as depicted in the Rgveda*

INDIAN HISTORICAL RESEARCHES

RGVEDIC INDIA

Cultural History of India as Depicted in the Rgveda

DAS A.C.

Vol. 17 (I)



COSMO PUBLICATIONS

First Published 1920
This series 1987

Published by
RANI KAPOOR (Mrs)
COSMO PUBLICATIONS
24-B, Ansari Road, Darya Ganj,
New Delhi-110002 (India)

Printed at
M/S Mehra Offset
New Delhi

STATE CENTRAL LIBRARY, WEST BENGAL

ACCESSION NO.27472.....

DATE.....3...4...83

7003

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

I have called this work "R̥gvedic India"¹ with a view to limit my enquiry into the early history of the Aryans to the period during which the R̥gvedic hymns were composed. Even this period is wide enough, consisting as it does of three ages, *vis.*, the *Early age*, the *Mediæval age*, and the *Later age*, during which the hymns were revealed (Rv. iii. 32, 13 & vi. 21, 5).² The R̥gveda is admittedly the oldest work extant of the Aryans, and with it may be classed the Sāma-Veda. The former is a book of hymns or psalms offered to the different Gods, and the latter consists entirely of hymns (excepting only 75) taken from the R̥gveda, and "arranged solely with reference to their place in the Soma sacrifice." The Yajur-Veda consists not only of hymns mostly borrowed from the R̥gveda, but also of original prose formulas for the performance of sacrifice. Its matter has come down to

¹ To put it briefly, this work is an outline of the Early History of India as depicted in the R̥gveda, examined in the light of the results of modern Geological, Archæological and Ethnological investigations, and drawn from a comparative study of the early civilisations of the Deccan, ancient Aryana, Babylonia, Assyria, Phœnicia, Asia Minor, Egypt and Pre-historic Europe.

² Rv. iii. 32 13 — यथेन्द्रसवसा यज्ञं यदीमेव सुखाय मयसि महिमा ।
यः सोमेभि व्योहते पूष्यं भि यो मयमेभिहत नूतनेभिः ॥

"The worshipper, by his conservatory sacrifice, has made Indra present. May I bring him to my presence to obtain new wealth, him who has been exalted by praises, whether *ancient, mediæval or recent*."

Rv. vi. 21, 5.—इदा हि ते देवितः इराजाः प्रेक्षास वासः पुत्राश्च वराः । ते मयसास तत नूतनास ततावन्स इव जत वाणि ॥

"O Indra, the performer of many feats, those (R̥sis) who flourished in the *early age* became thy friends by performing the sacrifices as at present. Those (that flourished) in the *mediæval age*, and those (that have flourished) in *recent times* have similarly earned thy friendship. Therefore, (O Indra), worshipped as thou art by many, (condescend to) listen to this hymn offered by thy (present) bumble (adorer)."

us in two forms. In the one, the sacrificial formulas only are given; in the other, these are to a certain extent intermingled with their explanations. The Yajur-Veda resembles the Sâma-Veda in having its contents arranged in the order in which it was actually employed in various sacrifices. It is, therefore, a book of sacrificial prayers (*Yajus*).¹ The Atharva-Veda is undoubtedly of later origin, as can be judged not only by its language, but also by other internal evidences, though it represents a much more primitive stage of thought than what we find in the R̥gveda. As Professor Macdonell observes, "while the R̥gveda deals almost exclusively with the higher Gods as conceived by a comparatively advanced and refined sacerdotal class, the Atharva-Veda is, in the main, a book of spells and incantations appealing to the demon-world, and teems with notions of witch-craft current among the lower grades of the population, and derived from an immemorial antiquity." Hence, though it was compiled in an evidently later age, it possesses a value of its own in so far as it helps us to understand the state of early popular culture in ancient Aryan society.

But the language of the R̥gvedic hymns being undoubtedly more archaic excepting some hymns of the Tenth Maṇḍala than that of the Atharva-Veda, their composition is rightly regarded as belonging to an earlier period. The Yajur-Veda and the Atharva-Veda contain in them distinct geographical references and other internal evidences which go to show that they were composed in a much later period than the R̥gvedic, the two periods having probably been separated from each other by thousands of years, during which many physical and climatic changes had taken place. The Brâhmanas, the Upaniṣads, and the Sûtras were composed in a still later age which extended down to what is ordinarily known as the Epic age. The Brâhmanas explain the true import of the *mantras* in their

¹ Vide Professor A. A. Macdonell's *History of Sanskrit Literature*, Chapter II.

application to the performance of sacrifices, and their composition became necessary in view of the growing intricacies of rituals, which people, in a later age, found difficult to understand. The composition of the Upaniṣads and the Sūtras marked the close of what is usually known as the Vedic period. But this period, comprising as it did, several thousand years in its compass, is too vast and extensive to be treated as one period, as it contains distinct strata, one separated from another by historical and geographical fossil-remains that clearly mark the different stages of the evolution of Aryan culture and civilisation. It would, therefore, be unscientific to treat the whole as one homogeneous period, as is usually done. The Ṛgveda, being admittedly the oldest record of the Aryans, furnishes, as it were, the datum line in historical stratigraphy,¹ and I have tried to decipher and read the fossils that have come to my notice in this stratum, to the best of my ability. I do not claim that all the fossils in this stratum have been exhausted; on the other hand, I have reasons to believe that there are a good many of them, probably more eloquent and convincing, which only wait to be discovered by the diligent research of patient Vedic students, and are likely to throw additional light on hitherto dark and unsuspected corners. But what I do claim is an humble attempt to treat the subject of ancient Aryan history, strata by strata, consistently with and in the order and sequence of the most ancient records available. In my humble opinion, it would be as absurd to treat the Ṛgveda and the other Vedas, the Bráhmaṇas, the Upaniṣads, and the Sūtras as belonging to one and the same period, as it would be to treat the achievements of maturity, when relating the freaks and

¹ "The hymns of the *Ṛgveda* being mainly invocations of the Gods, their contents are largely mythological. Special interest attaches to this mythology, because it represents an earlier stage of thought than is to be found in any other literature. It is sufficiently primitive to enable us to see clearly the process of personification by which natural phenomena developed into Gods." Macdonell's *History of Sanskrit Literature*, p. 67

prattlings of childhood, or dealing with the follies and excesses of youth in a biographical sketch. It is no doubt true that the child is father of the man ; but manhood is, after all, the outcome of the gradual development, stage by stage, of the physical, mental, and moral faculties of the child, and the successful biographer, while dealing with each stage separately, co-ordinates the progress made in one stage with that of the next, and shows how one naturally leads to another, until the fully developed stage is reached. So far as the ancient history of the Aryans is concerned, no serious attempt seems hitherto to have been made to study and trace the gradual growth and development of the race, stage by stage, after distinctly marking each out by a study of the vast ancient materials available. As I have already remarked, the Vedic Literature is usually treated as belonging to one period, without any care being taken to discern that it consists of different strata, one separated from another by distinct marks, and to note that each deserves separate treatment in order to make it yield valuable historical truths. But this is too heavy and arduous a task for any single scholar to accomplish. It should, therefore, be taken up by a number of learned Vedic scholars, preferably Indians, well versed in the modern art of historical research on a truly scientific basis, who should form themselves into a Society for the Reconstruction of Ancient Indian History from Vedic Literature which forms the only basis of research in this line. The task should be divided among scholars, each competent to take up a special stratum of the Literature for adequate treatment, who should place before the Society the results of their researches for discussion. After all the results of the researches made by them in the different strata will have been fully discussed and co-ordinated, it will be time to write a succinct history of the ancient Aryans. The study of Comparative Philology, Comparative Mythology, Comparative Religion, Comparative Culture, Geology, Archæology, Ethnology, Ancient Geography, the Ancient Histories of

Egypt, Babylonia and Western Asia, and the pre-historic picture of the European Races as outlined by competent scholars, should be brought to bear on the subject with a view to test the accuracy of the several results of investigation. In one sense, to an Indian Vedic scholar, the task would be far easier than that of compiling a history from the discoveries made in ancient ruins, the decipherment of writings on stones, clay-bricks, or papyrus, in languages that are dead and unintelligible, and the study of old coins of different dynasties that may have reigned in a particular country, or extended their conquest to another. These materials, though highly reliable, have not all been brought to light as yet, and such as have been, lie scattered and are not always and everywhere available. But in the Vedic Literature we have a sure and easily accessible basis to go upon, and the materials furnished by it are all compact, which it only requires an adequate mental equipment to study for the discovery of historical truths. The task of reconstructing the history of the ancient Aryans on the basis of the researches made in Vedic Literature should, therefore, prove far easier of accomplishment than that of writing the ancient history of any other people on the face of the Globe, and should be taken up by Vedic scholars in right earnest on the lines suggested above. Such a history, if compiled, would moreover be a real history of the *Aryan people*—the people as they lived, moved, acted, struggled, hoped, thought and advanced, step by step, towards progress and enlightenment, thousands of years ago, until they were able to speculate on, and attempt satisfactory solutions of the highest problems of human life. It would be a unique history in the world—a truly *democratic* history of a most ancient people. in which the achievements of kings and rulers are discounted, and the people only loom large, and the gradual development of the human mind is traced, step by step, until we find the divinity in man fully discovered and realised. From this point of view it would be a *Universal History* for all Mankind.

The present small and unpretentious volume is a faint and feeble attempt at studying the ancient history of the Aryan race from the earliest record available,—the *R̥gveda*, on these lines. How far will this attempt be found successful it is not for me to say. But I am fully conscious of my own shortcomings, inadequate equipment, and limited knowledge and power, and would fain leave the task to abler hands. My only excuse, however, in undertaking it is the necessity I strongly feel for drawing the attention of Vedic scholars to the line of research adopted by me, which, if properly worked and found scientifically correct, may yield valuable historical truths.

To quote an instance in point, I have tried to depict the physical features of the ancient Punjab from certain geographical references in the *R̥gveda*, which can only be clearly understood in the light of the results of modern Geological investigations. I have, therefore, had to draw on Geology for such help as would throw some light on the different distribution of land and water in the Punjab, in ancient times, of which clear indications are found in the *R̥gveda*. I must admit that the coincidence of *R̥gvedic* and Geological evidence is so startling and remarkable as to make me incline to the belief that some at least of the ancient hymns of the *R̥gveda* were composed before the dawn of history. If the age assigned by Geologists to the different distribution of land and water in the Punjab be correct, the composition of these ancient hymns must also necessarily synchronise with that age. This is the only legitimate inference we can draw in the matter.

The admission of the correctness of the above inference will naturally lead to the further inference that the Aryans were autochthonous to the Punjab (or *Sapta-Sindhu*, as it used to be called in Vedic times), or at any rate, had been living in the country from time immemorial and had advanced to a high state of culture from the stage of nomadic hunters living by the chase, before the *R̥gvedic* hymns were composed.

Their immigration, therefore, from Central Asia, Northern Europe, or the Arctic region becomes very improbable. If we accept this as a conclusion, the appearance of Aryan language in Europe has to be accounted for, and this I have endeavoured to do with the help of the results of investigations made by European savants themselves in the domains of Ethnology and Archæology. The Turanian type of the Celts, as established by Dr. Thurnam, has also been explained by me as satisfactorily as it has been possible for me to do with the help of available materials and the deductions drawn therefrom.

The mention of a "black" people in the *Ṛgveda*, who were called *Dāsas* (slaves) and *Dasyus* (robbers), has led Vedic scholars to identify them with the Kolarians and the Dravidians, more particularly, the latter, who were supposed to have been the predecessors of the Aryan immigrants in, if not the original inhabitants of the Punjab, from which, it is said, they were driven by their Aryan invaders to the south after a long and sanguinary struggle. But there is absolutely no justification for this supposition. I have proved in this book that these races were the original inhabitants of the southern Peninsula which, in *Ṛgvedic* times, formed part of a huge continent which was entirely cut off from the Punjab by intervening seas, and of which the Deccan is only a remnant. The *Dāsas* and the *Dasyus* were either the Aryan nomads in a savage condition, or Aryan dissenters from the orthodox Vedic faith. There was absolutely no room in ancient *Sapta-Sindhu* for the Kolarians and the Dravidians. Their original home in Central Asia is also a myth.

The *Paṇis*, mentioned in the *Ṛgveda*, were Aryan merchants of *Sapta-Sindhu*, who traded both on land and sea, and probably on account of their cosmopolitan character, did not subscribe to the orthodox Vedic faith. Their money-grabbing spirit and avaricious nature made them highly unpopular in *Sapta-Sindhu*, and after the upheaval of the

bed of the Rajputana Sea in post-Ṛgvedic times, most of them were compelled to leave the shores of their mother-country in search of convenient sea-coasts. They must have settled for sometime, among other places, in the Malabar and the Coromondal coasts of Southern India, famous for timber (the Indian teak) that furnished excellent materials for ship-building, where they spread such Aryan culture as they possessed among the Pāṇḍyas and the Cholas. These aryanised Dravidian tribes emigrated to and settled in Egypt and Mesopotamia respectively under the guidance of the Papis, and laid the foundations of the Egyptian and Babylonian civilisations. These Papis are known in Classical Literature as the Punic race, and latterly as Phœnicians after they had settled on the coast of Syria. I have dealt at some length in this book with Egyptian and Babylonian civilisations and traced in them the influence of Aryan (Vedic) culture. The Chaldeans, the Egyptians, the Phœnicians, and the pure Aryan immigrants like the Kossæans, the Hittites, the Mitannians, the Phrygians and the Lydians, etc., who had settled in the various parts of Western Asia and Asia Minor in different stages of civilisation, were, in a later age, completely absorbed by the great Semitic race which, though influenced by Aryan culture as represented by the Chaldeans and the ancient Babylonians, grew into a powerful nation and played an important part in the early history of Western Asia.

I have also tried to prove in this book that Northern or Central Europe was not, and could not have been the original cradle of the Aryan race. Nor was the Arctic region their cradle. Mr. Bāl Gangādhār Tilak has made a strenuous and sustained attempt to prove that there are indirect evidences in the Ṛgveda, and direct evidences in the Zend-Avesta of the original home of the Aryans in the Arctic region. I have, therefore, examined *in extenso* all his principal arguments, and proved their unreliability. I have devoted several chapters to an elaborate examination of the proofs

tendered by him in support of his theory, but I have found them unconvincing.¹

I have also thoroughly examined the hypothesis of the Central Asiatic home of the Aryans, and found it to be untenable. In R̥gvedic times there was a large Asiatic Mediterranean, extending from below ancient Bactriana to the heart of Siberia on the one hand, and from the confines of Mongolia to the Black Sea on the other, covering an immense area. This sea disappeared only in early historic times by the opening of the Bosphorus in consequence of volcanic action which caused a large portion of its waters to be drained off into the European Mediterranean, thereby leaving its shallow parts dry, which have since been converted into steppes, and its deeper parts as isolated lakes, *vis.*, the Black Sea, the Caspian Sea, the Sea of Aral and Lake Balkash. There was also another large Asiatic Mediterranean to the east of Turkestan, which was dried up in comparatively recent times, and of which Lake Lobnor is the remnant. The existence of these seas at a time when the R̥gvedic hymns were composed in the Punjab precluded the possibility of Central Asia having ever been the cradle of the Aryans before their alleged immigrations to the south and the west. Such portions of it as were habitable were occupied by the Turanian or Mongolian nomadic savages, leaving no room for the growth and expansion of the large Aryan tribes.

The original cradle of the Aryans was, therefore, Sapta-Sindhu which included the beautiful valley of Kashmir on the north, and Gandhâra on the west. Its southern boundary was the Rajputana Sea, and the eastern boundary the Eastern Sea covering the Gangetic trough. It was completely cut off from southern India by sea, but it was connected by land

¹ It is a matter of deep personal regret to me that Mr. Tilak died before this book could be got out of the Press. I had hoped to read his learned reply to my humble criticism of his theory of the Arctic Cradle of the Aryans, which undoubtedly would have furnished most interesting reading. His death has caused a gap in Oriental scholarship, which it would be difficult to fill.

with Western Asia in the direction of Gandhāra and Kabulistan, through which waves after waves of Aryan immigration advanced to the west, and to Europe across the province of Pontus (Sans. *pañthā*, highway) and over the *isthmus* of Bosphorus from early neolithic times, the earliest Aryan tribes that had left Sapta-Sindhu having been pushed farthest into Europe by those that followed them at long intervals, and in different stages of civilisation. This subject has been elaborately dealt with in this book.

These are some of the main conclusions I have arrived at; but there are also others no less interesting and startling which I leave my readers to find out in this work. I humbly bespeak their patience to go through it to the end before forming their judgment on the merits of these conclusions.

As this book has necessarily dealt with controversial matters, I found no opportunity of dealing, except in a cursory and incidental manner, with the culture and civilisation of the ancient Aryans, as depicted in the *R̥gveda*. I reserve a fuller and more detailed treatment of the subject for another volume.

Frequent references have been made in the early chapters to the results of geological investigations. I have tried my best to explain some of the geological terms as clearly as possible. But I think that it will be necessary for the lay reader to remember the different epochs, through which the Earth has passed, and which are discernible in the fossil-remains of plants and animals found embedded in rocks and some of the upper strata of the Earth's surface, showing a gradual evolution of plant and animal life. The earliest is the Palæozoic era when animal life on the Earth was of the crudest kind. The next was the Mesozoic, when a further evolution and development of animal life took place. Then followed the Cainozoic era which saw the appearance of mammals and their highest evolution in Man. Each era is divided into certain periods or epochs which it is not quite necessary to understand for the purposes of this book. But

as a table showing the different eras and epochs in the order of their sequence and succession from the earliest to the recent times will help the reader to understand the different phases through which the evolution of life has passed on our Globe, I give it below :—

<i>Eras.</i>		<i>Epochs.</i>
Archæan or Eozoic	...	Fundamental Gneiss.
		{ Cambrian
		{ Silurian
Primary or Palæozoic	...	{ Devonian and Old Red
		{ Standstone
		{ Carboniferous
		{ Permian.
Secondary or Mesozoic	...	{ Triassic
		{ Jurassic
		{ Cretaceon
		{ Eocene
Tertiary or Cænozoic	...	{ Oligocene
		{ Miocene
		{ Pliocene
Post-Tertiary or Quaternary	...	{ Pleistocene (Glacial)
		{ Recent (Post-Glacial)

In conclusion, I invite in the name of Truth candid criticism of the points urged by me in this work. None will rejoice more than myself if they prove, on criticism, to be untenable. For, Truth alone triumpheth, and not Untruth, as a Vedic Ṛṣi has declared. I have ventured to write this book on the principle that one hypothesis is probably as good as another, if it can be supported by facts and arguments, and afford some food for thinking to the learned. At this stage, therefore, it would be quite premature for me to predict the course that the ancient history of the Aryan race *must* take, if my hypothesis be found on examination to conuin any elements of Truth.

I have given references in the foot-notes to the authorities consulted by me when discussing a point. Yet, for the sake of convenience, I have given a short Bibliography elsewhere. An Index also has been appended, which, it is hoped, will be found useful by the reader for making ready references. It

is just possible that through hurry, inadvertence or printer's mistake, a passage here and there may have gone unacknowledged, which, when brought to my notice, will be thankfully acknowledged in subsequent editions.

My indebtedness to those Archæologists and Oriental scholars, European, American and Indian, whose works I have consulted and drawn freely from, is immense. But for the results of the investigations made by them in their respective subjects, it would have been quite impossible for me to collect materials for, and write this work. It is, however, fair to state here that having, unfortunately, no sufficient knowledge of any other European language than English, I have had, as a matter of course, to depend on the English translations of the works of French, German and other European savants, when available, or references made to their opinions on particular points by English authors, in order to draw therefrom my own conclusions. A few verses of the R̥gveda have also been translated by me strictly on the basis of Sáyana's commentary. To the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, the *Historians' History of the World*, Dr. Taylor's *Origin of the Aryans*, Mr. Tilak's *Arctic Home in the Vedas*, Professor Macdonell's *History of Sanskrit Literature*, Mr. Pavgee's *Aryāvartīc Home*, and Mr. Scott-Elliot's *Lost Lemuria*, to mention only a few of the many excellent works I have consulted, I owe a deep obligation which I hereby acknowledge, for writing some of the chapters of this book. Lastly, I owe a deep debt of gratitude to my *Alma Mater*, the University of Calcutta, and to the Hon'ble Sir Asutosh Mookerjee, C.S.I., M.A., D.L., D.Sc., Ph.D., the worthy President of the Council of Post-Graduate Teaching in Arts in this University, for encouraging me in my research-work and helping this humble volume to see the light.

CALCUTTA,

The 17th December, 1920.

}

A. C. D.

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

I have revised this book in the light of the results of more recent geological investigations, and estimated the age of the *beginnings* of R̥gvedic civilisation in ancient Sapta-Sindhu at about 25,000 B.C. I have answered the criticisms of my theory made by some European *savants* in the First Chapter of my book *R̥gvedic Culture* (1925), to which I beg my readers to refer. They will also find Professor Jacobi's objections and Professor Keith's criticism answered in this book (pp. 47-50). The recent discoveries of the relics of an ancient civilisation made at Harrapa in the Punjab, and Mahenjodaro in Sind, whose age, according to Sir John Marshall, goes back beyond 3,000 B.C., open out possibilities for testing the vast antiquity of R̥gvedic civilisation. If the relics be proved to belong to the Sumerian or Dravidian civilisation, the latter may not necessarily be pre-Vedic, as is commonly surmised. If R̥gvedic civilisation be proved to have its beginnings in the Punjab about 25,000 B.C., the age of every other civilisation, Sumerian, Dravidian or Egyptian, must be post-Vedic, and not pre-Vedic.

CALCUTTA,
The 16th April 1927. }

A. C. D.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

	PAGE.
The Antiquity of the Ṛgveda and the Physical Features and Climate of Ancient Sapta-Sindhu ...	1

CHAPTER II.

Geological Evidence about the Physical Features of Ancient Sapta-Sindhu in Ṛgvedic times ...	19
--	----

CHAPTER III.

Ṛgvedic Evidence, supporting the Geological Evidence, and proving the vast Antiquity of Sapta-Sindhu	32
---	----

CHAPTER IV.

Further Ṛgvedic Evidence about the Antiquity of the Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu	51
---	----

CHAPTER V.

Description of the Land and the Rivers of Sapta-Sindhu, and its Fauna, Flora and Minerals from the Ṛgveda	67
--	----

CHAPTER VI.

The Deccan or Southern India in Ṛgvedic Times ...	96
---	----

CHAPTER VII.

The Aryan Tribes of Ancient Sapta-Sindhu and the Dāsas and the Dasyus of the Ṛgveda	122
---	-----

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
CHAPTER VIII.	
The Dispersion of the Early Barbarous Aryan Tribes from Sapta-Sindhu	142
CHAPTER IX.	
The War between the Devas and the Asuras ...	152
CHAPTER X.	
The Dispersion of the Followers of Ahura Mazda from Sapta-Sindhu	173
CHAPTER XI.	
The Papis of Sapta-Sindhu, their Expansion in Western Asia and their Influence on Semitic, Egyptian and Greek Civilisations	188
CHAPTER XII.	
Indo-Aryan Influence on the Ancient Civilisations of Babylonia and Assyria	208
CHAPTER XIII.	
Indo-Aryan Influence on the Civilisation of Ancient Egypt	250
CHAPTER XIV.	
Indo-Aryan Influence in Western Asia	298
CHAPTER XV.	
Aryan Influence in Pre-historic Europe ...	318
CHAPTER XVI.	
The Theory of the Arvan Cradle in Central Asia ...	353
CHAPTER XVII.	
The Hypothesis of the Arctic Home of the Aryans ...	372

CONTENTS.

xxi

CHAPTER XVIII.

PAGE.

- Examination of Mr. Tilak's Theory of the Arctic
Cradle of the Aryans. The Night of the Gods ... 389

CHAPTER XIX.

- Examination of Mr. Tilak's Theory of the Arctic
Cradle of the Aryans (continued). The Vedic
Dawns 408

CHAPTER XX.

- Examination of Mr. Tilak's Theory of the Arctic
Cradle of the Aryans (continued). Long Day and
Long Night 438

CHAPTER XXI.

- Examination of Mr. Tilak's Theory of the Arctic
Cradle of the Aryans (continued). The Months
and the Seasons 462

CHAPTER XXII.

- Examination of Mr. Tilak's Theory of the Arctic
Cradle of the Aryans (continued). *Gavām-*
ayanam or the Cows' Walk 494

CHAPTER XXIII.

- Examination of Mr. Tilak's Theory of the Arctic
Cradle of the Aryans (continued). Vedic Myths
—the Captive Waters 522

CHAPTER XXIV.

- Examination of Mr. Tilak's Theory of the Arctic
Cradle of the Aryans (continued). The Matutinal
Deities 522

CHAPTER XXV.				PAGE.
Examination of Mr. Tilak's Theory of the Arctic				
Cradle of the Aryans (concluded). The Avestic				
Evidence	..	...	...	571

CHAPTER XXVI.

Concluding Remarks	...	...	...	575
Bibliography	...	...	...	592
General Index	...	...	...	599
Prefaces and Contents	...	...	...	i-xxli.

Printed and Published by,
The Asiatic Society,
No. 1, T. Road, Calcutta-700030

RGVEDIC INDIA.

CHAPTER I.

THE ANTIQUITY OF THE RGVEDA AND THE PHYSICAL FEATURES AND CLIMATE OF ANCIENT SAPTA-SINDHU.

MODERN historians, before commencing to write the history of a people, usually devote a chapter to the description of the land and climate in which they live. For, it is generally acknowledged that land and climate exert a direct and no small influence on the growth and formation of a people's character, and the development of their social, religious, and political institutions. Any omission, therefore, to take note of this influence is surely to warp our judgment, and lead us to make a wrong estimate of the people whose history we write. The hardy and daring Afghan is as much the product of his rugged mountainous country and cold inhospitable climate, as the mild, intelligent and peace-loving Hindu is the product of the well-watered fertile plains of Northern India, and the hot enervating climate prevailing there. A careful study of a people's environments—of the geographical and climatic conditions in which they have thriven is, therefore, essential to the correct study of their history.

Of course, this study should only be made with regard to a people who have been *known* to live in a country for a considerable length of time, extending over several thousand years,—in fact, from time immemorial. It should be borne in mind that man was in days of yore, as he is even now, a migratory animal, and any recent migration of a people to a new country would not exhibit in them, to any appreciable extent or degree, the effects of climate and environments of the country of their adoption. It would take ages before *these*

would tell on their character and temperament. The Boer, the Australian, the American, the Canadian and the English in India would retain the distinguishing characteristics of their race for yet several generations to come, before the lands and climates could mark them out as their own.

This naturally leads us to the inference that the age of a people in a particular country is gauged by the proportion of the development of their character harmoniously with the climate and environments in which they live, move and have their being, and the greater this proportion, the longer is the age of the people in the country. If they are autochthonous, and a different climate, and different environments are proved to have existed in geological times when man flourished in this planet, their present characteristics must be traced back to hoary antiquity which should be calculated not by hundreds but by thousands of years, when this change took place.

History, in the proper sense of the word, does not, in the present state of our knowledge, acquired by research and investigation, go beyond fifteen thousand years at the utmost. No reliable records or proofs have, so far, been available to antiquarians, which can justify them in pushing it back to more ancient times. The history of ancient Babylonia, Assyria or Egypt has been based and constructed on tangible and unmistakable proofs obtained by the exploration of ancient ruins and the decipherment of the relics of a by-gone age and by-gone civilisation. But no such tangible proofs have been available in the land of the ancient Indo-Aryans. Not only have no ancient monuments been so far discovered, that can vie with Babylonian, Assyrian, or Egyptian monuments in antiquity, but there is no proof that such monuments do exist in any part of India, only waiting to be unearthed and laid bare to the gaze by the diligent research of patient antiquarians. The ancient monuments, hitherto discovered in India, do not go beyond the Buddhistic era, *i.e.*, the Sixth Century B. C., which, compared with Babylonian, Assyrian and

Egyptian monuments, are but the products of yesterday.¹ And yet, strange and absurd as it would seem, the Hindus claim to be the most ancient civilised people in the world, more ancient than even the pre-dynastic races of ancient Egypt, the Sumerians of Chaldea, or the Assyrians of Nineveh. Such a claim, based as it is on mere tradition, and probably kept alive by national vanity, and not founded on any tangible proofs, is rightly dismissed by historians as unworthy of any credence or serious consideration. The Indo-Aryans have been put down by them as a branch of the great "Indo-Germanic" family, which immigrated to India either from Northern and Central Europe, or the Circum-Polar regions, through Western or Central Asia, and developed an independent civilisation of their own in the land of the Five Waters long after ancient Babylonia, Assyria or Egypt had flourished, and probably commenced to decline.

European historians are accustomed to call the civilisation of ancient Egypt (and also of Babylonia) as "a world influence" and for it is claimed by them the honour of having laid the foundation of European civilisation. Referring to the civilisation of ancient Egypt, Dr. Adolf Erman observes :

"It is an early blossom put forth by the human race at a time when other nations were wrapped up in their winter sleep. In ancient Babylonia alone, where conditions equally favourable prevailed, the nation of the Sumerians reached a similar height."² Further on, he says :—"In the future, as in the past, the feeling with which the multitude regards the

¹ The recent discoveries made at Harappa in the Punjab and at Mahenjo Daro in Sind, however, take back Indian civilisation, if not the very beginnings of it, to the Third or the Fourth Millennium B. C., according to Sir John Marshall, Director General of Archaeology in India. It is believed that Sumerian civilisation in Babylonia was planted there by a people like the Dravidians of Southern India (vide Chap. XII). These discoveries will necessarily change the outlook on ancient Indian history, and help in proving the hoary antiquity of R̥gvedic civilisation. It is too early yet to base any definite conclusions on them.

² Hist. Hist. of the World, Vol. I, p. 59.

remains of Egyptian antiquity will be one of awe-struck reverence. Nevertheless, another feeling would be more appropriate, a feeling of grateful acknowledgment and veneration, such as one of a later generation might feel for the ancestor who had founded his family, and endowed it with a large part of its wealth. In all the implements which are about us now-a-days, in every art and craft which we practise now, a large and important element has descended to us from the Egyptians. And it is no less certain that we owe to them many ideas and opinions, of which we can no longer trace the origin and which have long come to seem to us the natural property of our own mind."¹

This feeling of grateful acknowledgment would appear to be most appropriate and natural, when it is remembered that it is admitted by European savants themselves that the age of the oldest neolithic lake-dwellings in Switzerland is 3,000 to 4,000 years², or at best 6,000 to 7,000 years, and the epoch of bronze in that country is as old as 1000 B.C. According to M. Arcelin, as late as 1150 B.C., stone implements were still exclusively used in Central Gaul, and about 400 B.C., bronze had not yet been replaced by iron.³ It would thus appear that when the peoples of Europe were "wrapped up in their winter sleep," or more correctly speaking, grovelling in darkness, Egypt and Babylonia had developed a civilisation which, after having reached its zenith, was on the decline, and whose remnants still command the admiration of the world. No wonder, therefore, that the Indo-Aryans, being regarded as the cousins of the Neolithic Aryan race of Europe, the age of their civilisation could not logically be pushed beyond 3,000 to 4,000 years, and must necessarily be held to be posterior to the civilisations of ancient Egypt and Mesopotamia.

The study of ancient monuments undoubtedly furnishes more or less reliable data for the construction of ancient

¹ Hist. Hist. of the World, Vol. I, p. 63.

² Keller, *Lake Dwellings*, pp. 526-528.

³ Taylor, *The Origin of the Aryans*, p. 59.

history ; but ancient records, either on stone or papyrus, or hymns committed to memory and handed down from generation to generation without the loss of even a single syllable, if such really exist, would, without doubt, be a better and surer source of reliable history. The ancient Egyptians had their records in hieroglyphic writing, as found on the famous Rosetta stone, and on walls and monuments, and in papyrus scrolls, inscribed in the hieratic character which was "a much modified cursive form of hieroglyphic simplified in the interest of rapid writing." These records have furnished antiquarians with abundant materials for writing a correct history of ancient Egypt. In Babylonia and Assyria, the records were inscribed either on stones or clay-bricks that were afterwards baked. These brick-tablets which once formed the library of the Assyrian King Asshurbanapal at Nineveh have been found in large numbers, and carefully assorted and interpreted by Assyriologists. They have furnished reliable materials for writing a succinct history of ancient Mesopotamia. In India, no records either on stones, clay-bricks, or papyrus, of the same age as the Egyptian and Mesopotamian records, have anywhere been discovered. But the most ancient record of Indo-Aryan culture is to be found in the sacred Scripture, called the *Rġveda Samhitā*, a collection of hymns addressed to the various bright deities of the sky, as well as to other deities, in language and sentiments, at once beautiful and simple, which bespeak a culture higher than, and in far advance of that of either the civilised Egyptians, or the Babylonians and Assyrians, not to speak of the savage neolithic lake-dwellers of Switzerland, or the Teutonic savages of kitchen-midden fame. These hymns, however, were not committed to writing on papyrus, palm-leaves, or baked clay-bricks, but to human memory carefully cultivated for the purpose, and were handed down from generation to generation without the loss of even a single word or syllable. The ancient Indo-Aryans probably thought this to be the surer and better method of preserving them from perishing in a world where everything, either stone, brick, or

papyrus perishes, excepting the human mind and soul. And herein probably lies the fundamental difference, unfortunately overlooked by European scholars, between the spirits of pure Aryan and pure Semitic or Turanian civilisations. This intuition, on the part of the ancient Indo-Aryans, of the superiority of mind and spirit over matter very probably accounts for the absence of any *material* proofs of their antiquity, which can directly appeal to an ordinary observer or antiquarian. The proofs they have left are altogether of a different kind, which can only be correctly read by those who are endowed with a far greater amount of patience, diligence, perseverance, and capacity for taking pains than is required in deciphering a clay-tablet or a stone-slab, and in fixing the age of a broken statue, or a stone monument. It is because these proofs do not appeal to the senses that they have not hitherto received that amount of attention which they eminently deserve. And the difficulty has been a thousand-fold enhanced by the dead and archaic language in which the hymns of the R̥gveda are found to be clothed. Even those who, by dint of their wonderful diligence and perseverance, were able to master it, could not always get at the real spirit underlying the hymns, probably through bias, prejudice and pre-conceived ideas, with which they started their study and enquiry. These have, in many instances, blinded them to the real import of passages which, read in the light of modern scientific knowledge in the domains of Geology, Archæology and Ethnology, could have put them on the right track, and led them to the discovery of great historical truths. For example, I have not seen the attention of any Vedic scholar, either European, American or Indian, strongly arrested by the perusal of verse 2, Sukta 95 of the Seventh Maṇḍala of the R̥gveda, which runs as follows:—

“*Ekā cetat Sarasvatī nadinām śucīryatī giribhyah
dsamudrāt.*”¹

¹ Rv. vii. 95, 2:—एका चेतत् सरस्वती नदीनां शुचिर्यती गिरिभ्यः आसमुद्रात् ।

This passage, rendered into English, would stand thus :—

“Of the rivers, the Sarasvatī alone knows (this),—the sacred stream *that flows from the mountains into the sea.*”¹

This verse clearly indicates that, at the time of its composition, the river Sarasvatī used to flow from the Himālaya directly into the sea. This river, however, at the present time, never reaches the sea, but loses itself in the sands of the desert of Rājputānā, the sea having receded a long distance, some hundreds of miles from its mouth. The evident inference is that since the composition of the verse, a different distribution of land and water has taken place, probably caused by a cataclysm or a series of cataclysms, resulting in a sudden or gradual upheaval of the bed of a sea that had once existed there. The result of geological investigation shows that, in a remote age, a sea actually covered a very large portion of modern Rājputānā, extending as far south and east as the Aravalli mountains, which Geologists have designated by the name of the Rājputānā Sea.² When did this sea finally disappear, it is very difficult to ascertain. But from the fact that “Tertiary and Secondary strata stretch across

¹ Professor Macdonell understands by the word *Samudra* not the sea or ocean, but the lower course of the Indus, which is a “collection of waters,” i.e., of the tributaries. But this interpretation is wrong as we have pointed out later on (see Chapter III). Ragozin also labours under the same wrong impression, for she says that *Samudra* means “gathering of waters.” She thinks that the word in the R̥gveda means “not the sea or ocean, but the broad expanse formed by the re-union with the Indus of the ‘five rivers,’ whose waters are brought to it by the Pantchanada” (*Vedic India*, p. 268, foot-note). The Sarasvatī, however, never flowed into the Indus, but directly into the sea, like the Indus. It was an independent river, and the marks of the old bed, still discernible in the sands, do not point to its conjunction with the Indus. The above passage of the R̥gveda has so much puzzled Ragozin as to make her observe: “This passage has led to the positive identification of the Sarasvatī as the Indus!” (p. 208). This shows the length one is apt to go by overlooking the plain meaning of a word.

² “The Aravallis are but the depressed and degraded relics of a far more prominent mountain system which stood in Palæozoic times on the edge of the Rājputānā Sea” *Imp. Geol. of the Ind. Emp.*, Vol. I, pp. 1-2 (1907).

from Sind, beneath the sands of the desert, towards the flank of the 'Aravalli,'"¹ it can be safely surmised that it lasted, at all events, down to the end of the Tertiary epoch. Even after this sea had disappeared, the low-lying flat regions of Rājputānā were occasionally encroached upon by the Arabian Sea. "Such encroachments of the sea on land" says Mr. Wadia in his *Geology of India* (P. 168), "known as 'marine transgressions,' are of comparatively short duration, and invade only low level areas, converting them for the time into epi-continental seas." Though the duration of these seas invading Rājputānā from time to time was comparatively short, speaking geologically, it is to be computed by at least thousands of years. It is very probable that during the period of one such "marine transgression" in pre-historic times, the Sarasvatī was observed to flow right into the sea, and the verse above referred to was composed. The well-known antiquarian scholar, Mr. V. B. Ketkar of Poona has recently "proved on astronomical evidence and Paurāṇic account that the Rājputānā and the Gangetic seas, nearly separating the Jambudvīpa (Southern India) from the Punjab and the Himālayas, disappeared after 7,500 B. C. by the upheaval, partly volcanic and partly seismic, of their beds."² If this calculation be correct, then the verse regarding the Sarasvatī flowing into the sea must have been composed long before this date.

Does not this furnish a datum, as strong and reliable as a Mesopotamian brick-tablet, or an Egyptian stone to go upon for proving the hoary antiquity of the Ṛgveda, or for the matter of that, of Vedic civilisation?

And yet the above verse is not the only solitary evidence of the high antiquity of the Ṛgveda, and of a different distribution of land and water at the time of its composition. The

¹ *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. XXII, p. 866 (Eleventh Edition).

² Paper read at the First Oriental Conference held at Poona in 1919. The above extracts are made from a letter addressed by Mr. Ketkar to the author on May 14, 1921.

land in which the Vedic Aryans lived is called in the Ṛgveda by the name of *Sapta-Sindhava* or the Land of the Seven Rivers, which included the Indus or Sindhu with its principal tributaries, on the west, and the Sarasvatī on the east. The Gangā and the Yamunā have certainly been mentioned only once or twice, but they have not at all been included in the computation of the Seven Rivers that gave the country its name. As we shall find later on, they were, in those days, comparatively insignificant rivers with only very short courses to run. Beyond the Gangā and the Yamunā, no other rivers of Northern India, nor any provinces like Panchāla, Kosala, Magadha,¹ Anga and Vanga find any mention in the Ṛgveda. Towards the south, neither the Deccan, nor the Vindhya mountains nor any of the large and famous rivers flowing through the Peninsula have been mentioned. The land, inhabited by the Aryans, appears to have extended as far to the north-west as Gandhāra, which is identified with modern Kandahar and Cabul, and as far to the north as Bactria and Eastern Turkestan across the Himālaya. Within these bounds was situated the ancient Sapta-Sindhu, or more correctly speaking, the Greater Sapta-Sindhu, the sacred land that witnessed the composition of the most ancient hymns extant of the Aryan race and the early growth and development of their most wonderful civilisation. But if this land were their original home, is it not very strange

¹ Kikala was the ancient name of South Behar. As the word occurs in Rv iii. 53, 14, it is supposed by European scholars like Wilson and Weber to refer to Magadha or South Behar. Śāyana explains the word to mean "the country inhabited by the non-Aryans." As the Vedic Aryans never knew of the existence of any land to the east of Sapta-Sindhu, it would be absurd to suppose that they knew South Behar or Magadha, without knowing Panchāla, Kosala, etc. Kikala in the Ṛgveda, therefore, *does not*, and *cannot* mean Magadha or South Behar. It was probably a barren hilly region in Sapta-Sindhu where the people did not offer Soma juice to Indra by mixing milk with it. Hillebrandt locates it in Sapta-Sindhu in a mountainous region. This name must have been transferred from Sapta-Sindhu to South Behar by Aryan immigrants in a later age, like the word *Saranyū* which was transferred from Gandhāra to Kosala. (For a fuller discussion of the subject, read *Ṛgvedic Culture* Ch. III, pp. 161-162.)

that, during a long stretch of time, which was necessary to the growth and development of the R̥gvedic literature and civilisation, the Aryans were not at all acquainted with the neighbouring provinces like Pañcāla, Kosala and Magadha which were not separated from Sapta-Sindhu by any insurmountable mountain-barriers, and formed parts, as it were, of the same plain as their own mother-country? The same query holds good with regard to the Deccan also. The Vindhya Ranges could not be said to have presented any serious obstacle to those who were accustomed to cross the Himālaya and the Sulaiman Ranges through narrow, steep and difficult passes. How can, then, the total absence of any mention in the R̥gveda of these neighbouring and accessible countries be satisfactorily explained? European scholars have broached the theory that the Vedic Aryans came to the province of Sapta-Sindhu as invaders; and they settled there after carrying on a sanguinary and protracted warfare with the aboriginal inhabitants of the country, who were a black race, and far inferior to the Aryans in culture and civilisation, and whom the latter ultimately vanquished and drove to the Southern Peninsula. It has been argued, with some force, that this long period of pre-occupation of the Aryans in the struggle prevented them from penetrating either to the east or the south of Sapta-Sindhu, and that it was only in later and more peaceful times that they thought of gradually expanding and migrating farther and farther to the east and the south. This theory, it need hardly be said, is quite in keeping with the other theory of Aryan immigration to India from Northern and Central Europe, through Western or Central Asia, which is now generally accepted by European and Indian scholars alike. But it is passing strange that it did not strike any of them that the R̥gvedic Aryans were not acquainted with the Eastern Provinces *for no other reason than because they did not really exist during R̥gvedic times*,—a long stretch of sea having been in existence in the Pleistocene and the beginning of the modern Epoch from the eastern

shores of Sapta-Sindhu down to the confines of Assam, into which the Gangā and the Yamunā, after running their short courses, poured their waters; and that the Deccan, having been completely cut off and separated from Sapta-Sindhu by the Rājputānā sea and the sea lying between the Central and Eastern Himālaya and the Vindhya Ranges, it was not at all easily accessible to them.¹ The existence of these seas is a geological fact, as we shall see later on, which also finds an unexpected corroboration in the Ṛgveda itself. Verse 5 in Sukta 136 of the Tenth Maṇḍala distinctly mentions the existence of the Eastern and the Western Seas:—

*Vātasyāśvo vāyoh sakhātha deveṣitomunih, ubhau samudravā kṣeti yaśca pūrva utāparah.*²

This verse, rendered into English, would read thus:—

“The Muni is the aerial steed and friend of Vāyu, whom all the Devas feel an eagerness to behold, and who dwells in ooth the seas—that which is in the east, and that which is in the west.”

A word of explanation seems to be necessary here. The Muni is the God *Kēśi* (lit. hairy) who is identified with the Sun whose rays are like the auburn (golden) hair of a Muni or ascetic. The Sun is usually also compared to the horse in the Ṛgveda. The bard, therefore, says that the Sun is the aerial steed, and friend of Vāyu (wind), whom all the Devas feel an eagerness to behold, in as much as they are all Gods of light, and darkness is against their very nature. This God, Kēśi, or the Sun, says the poet, dwells both in the Eastern and Western Seas, because he is seen to rise from the Eastern Sea and to sink down to rest in the Western. Now this Eastern Sea could have been no other

¹ Mr. H. G. Wells in his *Outline of History*, (pp. 39 & 45) points out the existence of this sea between 50,000 and 25,000 years ago. (See *Infra*).

² Rv. x. 136, 5.—वातस्याश्वो वायोः सखाय देवेषितोमनिः । उभौ समुद्राव । केति यश्च पूर्वं उत्तापरः ॥ Compare also Rv. vii. 55, 7 and x 72, 7.

than the sea that washed the eastern shores of Sapta-Sindhu, in as much as the R̥gvedic Aryans did not know of the existence of any land to the east of their country. It was over this sea that the Aśvins, the twin deities that preceded and heralded the Dawn, used to come to Sapta-Sindhu, sailing in their boats which they left moored in the harbour on the sea-coast (Rv. i. 46, 8), and it was from this sea that their car turned up (Rv. iv. 43, 5). It was from this sea again that the Dawn appeared on the horizon of the eastern sky, *looking bright and beautiful like a young damsel, after her morning ablutions* (Rv. v. 80, 5). Further, it was from the depth of these waters that the Sun was seen from the shores of Sapta-Sindhu to emerge and ascend the sky (Rv. iii. 55, 1; v. 45, 10; vii. 55, 7; x. 136, 5), and this fact is still further confirmed by the following passage: "The Gods lifted Surya out of the sea (*samudra*) wherein he lay hidden" (Rv. x. 72, 7). These waters were, therefore, rightly regarded as "the birth-place of the Sun" and "the mother of the Aśvins" who have been described as *Sindhumātaraḥ* (Rv. i. 46, 2). The Western Sea into which the God Keśi sank down to rest was undoubtedly an arm of the Arabian Sea which, in those days, ran up the present lower valley of the Indus along the foot of the Western Range, and covered a large portion of the present province of Sindh, probably up to Lat. 30° North. Does not this internal evidence of the R̥gveda support the geological evidence, and unmistakably prove its hoary antiquity?

There is yet another internal evidence furnished by the R̥gveda to prove its high antiquity. In some verses mention has been made of four different seas with which the ancient Indo-Aryans seemed to have been familiarly acquainted¹ (Rv. ix. 33, 6 and x. 47, 2). But Vedic

¹ Rv. ix. 33, 6:—रायः समुद्राश्चतुर्दशान्यं सायं विवृतः । आ पवस सप्तशिवाः ॥
Rv. x. 47, 2:—सावित्रं सवतं सुनीयं चतुःसमुद्रं धवणं रयीषाम् । अर्जुनं शंसं भूरिवारुणक्यं त्रिवं इषणं रयिष्वाः ॥

scholars, both European and Indian, have passed them by, and not cared to ascertain the existence of the four seas mentioned therein, probably for the simple reason that there is only one sea to the south-west of Sapta-Sindhu at the present time, *vis.*, the Arabian Sea, and it is difficult to identify the other three with any modern seas. The Bay of Bengal to the east, and the Indian Ocean to the south of India are quite out of the question, as it has been admitted that the R̥gvedic Aryans did not go beyond the limits of Sapta-Sindhu, and were not acquainted with any land eastward or southward during R̥gvedic times. In these circumstances, the four seas mentioned in the R̥gveda, which were navigated by Aryan merchants in quest of wealth,¹ have probably been regarded as more mythical than real. But geological evidence goes to show that there were actually three seas on the three sides of Sapta-Sindhu, *is.*, the Eastern, the Western, and the Southern, and it now only remains for us to identify the fourth sea. It must have been situated somewhere on the north, beyond the Himālaya, on the confines of the land inhabited by the Aryans. And Geology proves that such a sea did actually exist in ancient times, stretching from below the highlands of modern Turkestan towards Siberia on one side, and from the confines of Mongolia to the Black Sea, on the other, covering an immense area. This sea disappeared in comparatively recent geological times, leaving the Black Sea, the Sea of Aral, Lake Balkash, and an extensive depression now dry and converted into steppes, as its remnants. The Black Sea was not at that time connected with the Mediterranean, and its western shores formed the Isthmus of Bosphorus linking Europe with Asia. On the confines of East Turkestan also there was in ancient times another immense Asiatic Mediterranean Sea, of which Lake Lobnor the remnant. These are stern geological facts which

¹ Rv. i. 48, 3; 56, 2; ii. 6, 3; iv. 55, 6; also v. 85, 6; vii. 88, 3.

will be dealt with in greater details in the next chapter, but which find a startling corroboration in the R̥gveda. Does not this again prove its vast antiquity ?

Lastly, the climate and the seasons, as prevailed in ancient Sapta-Sindhu, have also undergone a complete change in comparatively recent times, probably through a change of her physical environments. There is R̥gvedic and Avestic evidence to prove that in ancient times a cold climate prevailed in the land for a greater part of the year, which was highly conducive to the development of the physical and mental activities of the Aryans. The year has been called in the R̥gveda by the names of *Sarad* (autumn) (Rv. vii. 66, 16) or *Hima* or *Hemanta* (winter, Rv. i. 64, 14 ; ii. 1, 11 ; 33, 2 ; v. 54, 15 ; vi. 10, 7 ; 48, 8), probably on account of the predominance of the characteristics of a particular season, during a greater part of the year, in particular areas. But the very use of the above words to denote a year clearly indicates the existence of either a cold or temperate climate in Sapta-Sindhu. The Avesta says that Sapta-Sindhu or *Hapta Hendu* possessed a delightfully cold climate in ancient times, which was changed into a hot climate by *Angra Mainyu*, the Evil one. Mr. Medlicott also says :—" There are some curious indications of a low temperature having prevailed in the Indian area at ancient epochs." ¹ In this conjecture he is supported by Mr. H. F. Blanford who says :—" In the early Permian, as in the *Post-Pliocene age*, a cold climate prevailed down to low latitudes, and I am inclined to believe in both hemispheres simultaneously." ² The *Encyclopædia Britannica* also says : " Evidence exists of a former far greater extension of glaciers in the Himālaya, possibly at the period during which the great glacial phenomena of Europe occurred ; but too little is known to enable us to affirm that this indicates any general

¹ *Manual of the Geology of India*, (Preface, p. xxi).

² *Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society*, Vol. XXXI, 1875, pp. 534, 540.

period of cold that affected the Northern hemisphere as far south as the Himālaya, though the facts are sufficiently striking to suggest such a conclusion." ¹ The Post-Pliocene epoch being conterminous with the Pleistocene epoch when man undoubtedly flourished on our globe, the designation of the year by the word *Hima* or winter in the R̥gveda clearly points to the prevalence of low temperature in that country down to the commencement of the modern epoch, and also to the great antiquity of the sacred Scripture itself. The present climate of the Punjab or Sapta-Sindhu is excessively hot, except during the winter months, when the cold becomes intense. We will presently see what brought about this change of climate.

We find evidence in the R̥gveda of heavy showers of rain falling in Sapta-Sindhu during the rainy season which lasted for three or four months, covering the sky all the time with a thick pall of sombre clouds, behind which the Sun and the Dawn remained hidden, making the days look like nights and considerably adding to the misery and discomfort of men and beasts. The rivers were in high flood, and the spill-water covered an extensive area. All these characteristics of the rainy season have now disappeared from Sapta-Sindhu where the rain-fall is scanty and the climate dry. This change is due to the disappearance of three out of the four seas round about Sapta-Sindhu, and the upheaval of a vast tract of arid desert in the south. The immense volumes of watery vapours, which were generated in and carried from the seas in ancient times, used to be precipitated as snow over the high and low altitudes of the Himālaya, and as showers of rain in the plains. The rain-water in the rainy season, and the melting snow in summer kept up a perennial supply of water in the rivers, and the Sarasvatī and the Dṛṣadvatī which probably took their rise from glaciers on the southern slopes of the

¹ *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. II, p. 68 (Ninth Edition); Read also Wadia's *Geology of India*, p. 5.

Himālaya in ancient times, were mighty streams whose praises have been sung in the R̥gveda. With the disappearance of the ocean-area, the glaciers also disappeared and the rivers gradually dwindled into insignificant and straggling streams.¹ The *Encyclopædia Britannica* says: "An explanation of the decrease of Himalayan glaciers is that it was a consequence of the diminution of the fall of snow, *consequent on the gradual change of climate which must have followed a gradual transformation of an ocean-area into one of dry land.* The last-named circumstance would also account for the great changes in the quantity of rain-fall, and in the-flow of the rivers, of which there are many indications in Western India, in Persia, and the region east of the Caspian."²

It would thus appear that there have been vast changes in the land, water and climate of ancient Sapta-Sindhu since the R̥gvedic hymns were composed. Do not these internal evidences of the R̥gveda, supported as they are by the results of modern geological investigations, go to prove its vast antiquity, stretching back to time immemorial? And are they not as reliable as the Egyptian hieroglyphic writings and inscriptions, and Mesopotamian brick-tablets, and writings on clay-cylinders? But it is a thousand pities

¹ Mr. Wadia in his *Geology of India* (1919) writes as follows: "Many parts of the Himalayas bear the records of an *Ice-age* in comparatively recent times. Immense accumulations of moraine *debris* are seen on the tops and sides of many of the ranges of the middle Himalayas, which do not support any glaciers at the present time. Terminal moraines, often covered by grass, are to be seen before the snouts of existing glaciers at such low elevations as 6,000 feet or even 5,000 feet. Sometimes there are grassy meadows, pointing to the remains of old ailted-up glacial lakes. These facts, together with the more doubtful occurrences of what may be termed fluvio-glacial drift at much lower levels in the hills of the Punjab, lead to the inference that this part of India at least, if not the Peninsular highlands, experienced a Glacial Age in the Pleistocene period," (pp 15-16) Elsewhere he says: "The ice-transported blocks of the Patwar plains in Rawalpindi also furnish corroborative evidence to the same effect," (P. 245).

² *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. II, p. 688 (Ninth Edition).

that Vedic scholars and Indologists have not brought even a tithe of that careful and diligent research to bear on the study of ancient Indian history, that has been bestowed on the study of Egyptian and Mesopotamian history by Egyptologists and Assyriologists, probably through a pre-conceived idea that Indo-Aryan civilisation could not be older than the civilisation of the neolithic lake-dwellers of Europe, and an omission to study ancient Indian history in the light of the results of modern geological investigations. The time, however, has come when a fresh study should be commenced on these lines, and a re-examination of the already accepted theories made, regardless of the conclusions they may lead us to.

I hope, I have been able to demonstrate in this chapter the absolute necessity of studying, with the help of Geology, the old distribution of land and water of a country in which a very ancient people have lived from time immemorial in order to read aright their ancient history. I have also given occasional glimpses to my readers, so far as it has been possible for me to do in a preliminary chapter, of the hoary antiquity of the Ṛgveda, containing as it does unmistakable geological proofs of a different distribution of land and water, and the existence of a different climate in Sapta-Sindhu in ancient times. These geological proofs will be more closely examined and more elaborately discussed in the next chapter.

CHAPTER II.

GEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE ABOUT THE PHYSICAL FEATURES OF ANCIENT SAPTA-SINDHU IN RGVEDIC TIMES.

Physical changes, constant though often silent and imperceptible, have been going on in our globe. Sometimes in the past the changes were extremely violent and sudden, due to fearful volcanic action and extensive seismic disturbances of great intensity, resulting in the sudden upheaval or subsidence of vast tracts of land. But such disturbances and changes were more frequent in very ancient than in recent geological epochs. The upheaval of the Middle and Northern Himālaya had taken place before man flourished on our globe. The magnitude and intensity of the throes through which Mother Earth passed when giving birth, though after long intervals, to the different parts of this gigantic child surpass even the keenest and most comprehensive human imagination. With the elevation of the Middle Himālaya was produced a deep trough at its foot on the southern side. How was it produced is a matter of conjecture and controversy among Geologists, with which we are not here concerned. Sir Sidney Burrard's hypothesis is that "the depression of the trough was produced by a withdrawal of material towards the Himālaya," and he considers "the range to have been produced by the invasion of the material so withdrawn."¹ The great Geologist, Edward Suess, "has suggested that it is 'fore-deep' in front of the high crust-waves of the Himalayas as they were checked in their southward advance by the inflexible solid land-mass of the Peninsula."² These are the latest explanations of its origin, which are more or less accepted. But whatever may be the causes of this upheaval and depression, there is no

¹ *Memoirs of the Geological Survey of India*, Vol. XLII, Part 2 (Oldham, On the Structure of the Himālaya), p. 137. Read also "On the Origin of the Himālaya Mountains." *Survey of India, Prof. Paper No. 12*, Calcutta, 1912.

² Wadia's *Geology of India*. P. 248.

question that a deep trough did exist at the foot of the Himalayan range in ancient geological times.¹ This trough or sea lasted through long ages during which it was gradually filled up with alluvium, into which were embedded the remains of a rich varied fauna "of herbivores carnivores, rodents and of primates, the highest order of the mammals," brought down by the rivers and streams. Their inter-stratification with marine fossiliferous beds took a long period of time, at the end of which another seismic disturbance of great intensity caused an upheaval of these beds, which formed the outer or sub-Himalayan Zone, "corresponding to the Siwalik Ranges, and composed entirely of Tertiary, and principally of upper Tertiary sedimentary river-deposits."² With the upheaval of the Siwalik Range was again produced a deep trough at its foot which also began to be filled up with alluvium until the present plains of Northern India were formed. Mr. R. D. Oldham says that "the depth of the alluvium along the outer edge of the Himālaya is great, amounting to about 15,000 to 20,000 feet towards the northern boundary of the alluvial plain."³ As regards the underground form of the floor of the trough, it has been found that "it has deepened steadily from south to north at about 130 feet to the mile, and that this slope is continuous for over 100 miles from the southern edge, so that in this way we reach an estimated depth of over 13,000 and probably about 15,000 feet."⁴ This trough ends up on the east where the Assam Range impinges on the Himālaya and terminates on the west as the Salt Range of the Punjab is reached. It is "a fairly symmetrical trough, ranged along the whole of that part of the Himālaya, which is not complicated by the junction or contact of other ranges."⁵ It has been described by Mr. Oldham as "the Gangetic

¹ "The northern frontier of this (the Southern) continent was approximately co-extensive with the central chain of the Himālayas, and was washed by the water of the *Tethys*" (Wadia's *Geology of India*, pp. 109-110.)

² Wadia's *Geology of India* P. 10.

³ *Memoirs of the Geo. Surv. of India*, Vol. XLII, Part 2, p. 119.

⁴ *Ibid*, p. 66.

⁵ *Ibid*, p. 96.

trough," in as much as "three quarters of its length and more than that proportion of its area lie within the drainage of the Ganges.¹...There is some reason to suppose that a deep trough filled with alluvium similar to that which has been dealt with, though smaller in size, runs along the foot of the hill ranges of the Western frontiers of India proper, which might be called the Indus trough, as that river traverses it from end to end...But there is no reason to suppose that the two troughs are connected. Apart from the observations which have been dealt with, the outcrops of old rocks in the Chiniot and other hills which rise from the alluvium, point to the presence of a rock-barrier, stretching under the plains of the Punjab to the Salt Range, and separating the two troughs."²

It would thus appear that a large portion at least of the Punjab, or Sapta Sindhu as the Vedic bards called it, was older than the alluvial plains now occupying the Gangetic and the Indus troughs which were undoubtedly large stretches of inland seas at the beginning. Even now, the valley of the Indus or the Sindhu is known by the name of "Sindhu-Sāgara," or the Sindhu Sea. But this sea, not having been so wide, long and deep as the sea that occupied the Gangetic trough, the period of time taken to fill it up with alluvium was necessarily shorter, though certainly computed by thousands of years, than that taken to fill up the Gangetic trough. In other words, when the Punjab was firm land, bounded on the north by the Kashmir valley and the Himālaya and on the west by the Sulaiman Range, with the Indus and its tributaries and the Sarasvati flowing through the plains into the arm of the Arabian Sea covering a part of Rajputana and the lower regions of Sind, the Gangetic trough was still an inland sea, stretching from the confines of Sapta-Sindhu to those of Assam, which was certainly not so deep at that time as it had been at its origin, but yet deep enough to be called a sea for several thousand years more, during which it was gradually silted up with alluvium.

¹ *Ibid*, p. 98

² *Ibid*, p. 98

With regard to the Gangetic trough, Mr. Wadia thus observes in his *Geology of India*, (P. 248) : " In the Pleistocene period, the most dominant features of the geography of India had come into existence, and the country had then acquired almost its present form and its leading features of topography, *except that the lands in front of the newly upheaved mountains formed a depression which was being rapidly filled by the waste of the highlands.* The origin of this depression or trough, lying at the foot of the (Himālaya) mountains, is doubtless intimately connected with the origin of the latter, though the exact nature of the connexion is not known and is a matter of discussion." It would thus appear that in the Pleistocene period and even still later, there was a sea over the Gangetic trough which was being rapidly filled up with alluvium, and became firm land only after R̥gvedic times, as I have already pointed out in the preceding chapter.

In this connexion it would not be out of place and uninteresting to refer to two maps sketched by Mr. H. G. Wells and printed on pages 39 and 45 respectively of his excellent book, *The Outline of History* (1920). The first map shows " the possible outline of Europe and Western Asia at the maximum of the Fourth Ice Age about 50,000 years ago " corresponding to the " Neanderthaler Age," and the second map shows their possible outline " in the later Palæolithic age (35,000 to 25,000 years ago)." So far as Ancient India is concerned, we find it outlined very much in the same manner as I have outlined it in my map from " a geological study in the light of R̥gvedic evidence." The whole of Northern India and Rajputana and the greater part of the Punjab are shown in Mr. Wells' first map as covered by a vast and continuous sea which was connected with the Arabian Sea on the west and the Bay of Bengal on the east. Though my map of R̥gvedic India or *Sapta-Sindhavah* does not coincide in all its details with Mr. Wells' map, yet their general agreement in the broad outlines is certainly very remarkable. Mr. Wells' second map which represents a possible outline of Europe and Western Asia

about 35,000 to 25,000 years ago shows the uninterrupted continuity of the sea that separated the Punjab and the Himalayas from Southern India broken only by the formation of land in Eastern Rajputana, and points to the existence of a sea over a large portion of the Gangetic trough (which was undoubtedly "the Eastern Sea" of the R̥gveda), and of another sea or gulf over Western Rajputana and the whole of the province of Lower Sind. Both the maps generally agree with the different distribution of land and water in the Punjab, as it was in R̥gvedic times, and this indirectly proves the hoary antiquity of the R̥gvedic hymns which must have been composed during a period extending from about 25,000 to 7500 B. C. Let us now return to a discussion of the geological evidence regarding the Punjab.

Mr. Oldham thus distinguishes the features of the Gangetic plains from those of the plains of the Punjab:—"From the Yamunâ eastwards to the junction with the Brahmaputra Valley is the great tract of the typical Gangetic alluvium which bears all the characters of a plain of deposit, and across which the rivers flow in courses determined by their own action and inter-action. In the plain of the Punjab these features are largely absent, and the surfaces suggest a much smaller thickness of alluvial deposit, a suggestion which is strengthened by the occurrence of outliers of older rocks, rising as hills in the centre of the alluvial plain."¹

Mr. Oldham further says elsewhere: "The general facies of the fauna (found in the beds of the Salt Range of the Punjab) are of Cambrian age and *consequently the oldest in India*, whose age can be determined with any approach to certainty."² The Cambrian age, it should be remembered, is the first of the Palæozoic Era. As the beds of the Salt Range have been proved to belong to that age, the land of Sapta-Sindhu must have been in existence from very early times, and is certainly older than the northern Himālaya which probably was elevated at the end of the Palæozoic or

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 8.

² *Manual of the Geology of India*, p. 109, Edn., 1893.

the beginning of the Mesozoic Era, as is evidenced by its Carboniferous and Triassic formations.¹ The ancient age of the Punjab will be further proved by the following extracts from the *Imperial Gazetteer of India* :²

"The datum line in stratigraphy is the base of the Cambrian system, the so-called *Olenellus* zone, characterised in various parts of the world by remains of this genus, or its near relations belonging to the extinct order of Crustacea known as Trilobites. Below this line, there are many thousand feet of strata without determinable fossil remains, and generally quite unfossiliferous; above it are piled the great fossil-bearing systems preserving the records of evolution among animals and plants through the Palæozoic, Mesozoic and Cainozoic eras to the present day.

"Fortunately, in India, *we have a trace of this datum line preserved in the Salt Range of the Punjab*, where, although the Trilobites preserved are not exactly like the well-known *Olenellus*, there are forms which must have been close relations of it, and we can safely assume that these beds are equivalent to the lower Cambrian of the European scale."

It is thus clear that the Punjab or *Sapta-Sindhu* is the oldest life-producing region in the whole of the Indian continent; and it is equally certain that here the evolution among animals continued uninterruptedly, until man was evolved or created, and appeared on the scene.

It may be mentioned here in passing that the Indo-Aryans believe themselves to be autochthonous to the Punjab, and the R̥gveda to be as old as the creation of man, in other words, to have emanated from Brahmâ, the Creator himself; and it is regarded as *Apauruṣeya*, i.e., not ascribable to any human agency, though the R̥sis or seers might have clothed the revealed truths and eternal verities in languages of their own, from time to time. This, bereft of all exaggerations, would mean that the R̥gveda has existed from time immemorial.

¹ H. F. Blanford in the *Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society*, Vol. XXXI, 1875, pp. 524-41.

² *Imp. Gaz. of India*, Vol. I, p. 53, Edn., 1907.

To this belief of the Indo-Aryans, however absurd it might seem, the results of geological investigations, as quoted above, undoubtedly lend some strong colour. It may also be stated here that the ancient Aryans did not believe, like Darwin, in the evolution of man from anthropoid apes; but they believed, like Agassiz of the Creationist School, that man was created independently as such. As Agassiz says, "there is a manifest progress in the succession of beings on the surface of the earth. This progress consists in an increasing similarity of the living fauna, and among the vertebrates especially, in their increasing resemblance to man. . . But this connection is not the consequence of a direct lineage between the faunas of different ages. There is nothing like parental descent connecting them. The fishes of the Palæozoic age are in no respect the ancestors of the reptiles of the Secondary age, nor does man descend from the mammals which preceded him in the Tertiary age. The link by which they are connected is *of a higher and immaterial nature*; and their connection is to be sought in the view of the Creator Himself, whose aim in forming the earth in allowing it to undergo the successive changes which geology has pointed out, and in creating successively all the different types of animals which have passed away, was to introduce man upon the surface of our globe. Man is the end towards which all the animal creation has tended from the first appearance of the Palæozoic fishes." ¹ This exactly represents the view of man's appearance on the globe held by the ancient Indo-Aryans also, of which we shall have occasion to write hereafter.

Be that as it may, if the composition of the R̥gvedic hymns be ascribed to a period computed from about 25,000 to 7500 B. C., there can be no doubt that man, particularly Aryan man in India, was in a comparatively civilised state in this period. The Pleistocene is ordinarily known as the "human epoch," and there is evidence of Pleistocene man having made some progress towards rudimentary civilisation

¹ *Principles of Zoology*, pp. 205-206.

in some parts of the world. Thus Dr. Keith writes about the culture of Neanderthal man in Europe: "In mid-Pleistocene times, the brain of Neanderthal man, in point of size, was equal to that of contemporary forms of modern man. His culture, that of the Mousterian age, was not a low one." ¹ Rev. Mr. E. O. James says in his *Introduction to Anthropology* (1919) that "the Palæolithic period of archæology corresponds roughly to the Pleistocene of the geologist, while the pre-Palæolithic or Eolithic period extended far back into the Tertiary era." (P. 18). Further on he says: "It may be reasonably supposed that clothing, like cave-dwelling, was one of the arts of life learnt by man in the Pleistocene, probably early in the Mousterian phase," and that "in the early Pleistocene, there is evidence of the existence of fires, as for example, in the hearths discovered in Mousterian sites" (P. 98). From all these extracts, we get some idea of the predecessors of modern man in the Pleistocene epoch, and also glimpses of the state of their culture, which "was not a low one."

As the Punjab was the oldest life-producing region in the whole of the Indian continent, and admittedly one of the principal foci of civilisation in the ancient world, we may take it for granted that, in the Pleistocene epoch, the primitive Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu or the Punjab developed a culture not only not inferior to that of Pleistocene man in Europe, but, in many respects, probably even far superior to it, as its gradual and continuous development and final culmination in R̥gvedic civilisation would lead one to suppose. If the Indo-Aryans were autochthones in Sapta-Sindhu, they must have passed through the eolithic, the palæolithic and the neolithic stages of their development, though, in the R̥gveda, we do not find any mention of stone or bone weapons, excepting Indra' *ajra*, as the R̥gvedic Aryans had long ago passed through those stages and were well acquainted with the use of iron, from which weapons and implements were made. The mortar and pestle which

¹ Keith's *The Antiquity of Man* (1916), p. 503.

probably were made of stone, as also of wood, the flat stone slab and the round stone hammer, used for the purpose of crushing and pounding hard substances (*Dṛṣad-Upalá*), all of which were requisitioned at the time of the Soma-sacrifice, and the horn-tipped arrow-head mentioned in the *R̥gveda* (vi. 75, 11) might, however, be some of the relics of the early stages of civilisation, through which the ancient Aryans had passed.¹ They seem to have been a highly gifted people, endowed with a superior genius which enabled them to effect their material, moral and spiritual evolution more rapidly than their contemporaries in Southern India, some of whom are still in the same savage condition of the Stone Age as they were in, hundreds of thousands of years ago. Writing about them Ragozin observes: "We seem to listen to the grotesque fancies of a dream, wild even for a dream, when we are told of people who live, or at least huddle together for shelter in kennel huts, six feet by eight, wear no clothes but bunches of leaves fastened to a string of beads that encircles the waist, and use flint weapons, not having even words for any metals in their language, thus affording us a startling glimpse of the Stone Age, a survival not even of the highest type of that Age's civilisation."² Thus it would appear that while palæolithic men, belonging to the Dravidian and the Kolarian races, roamed as savages in the hills and forests of Southern India, the ancient Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu, completely cut off from them by seas, developed a high state of civilisation, obliterating all relics of the primitive stages of their progress.

Let us now turn back from this digression to the other geological evidences proving the antiquity of Sapta-Sindhu. The existence of the Rājputānā Sea to the south of this region down to the seventh or eight millennium B. C. has already been referred to. The large admixture of salt in the sandy soil of the deserts of Rājputānā, the salt beds from which

¹ For a fuller treatment of this subject, read author's *R̥gvedic Culture* Chap. II.

² *Vedic India*, p. 299. Read also Chap. VI (*Infra*).

even now an abundant supply of salt is drawn, and the existence of the Sambhar and other lakes whose waters still retain much of the salinity of the sea, all point to the extension of the Arabian Sea up to the confines of Sapta-Sindhu on the one hand, and of the Aravalli Hills on the other. It is further certain that the Arabian Sea also sent up an arm towards the Indus trough and covered a large part of the province of Sind, which is now occupied by desert and the lower course of the Indus.

As regards the existence of a sea in the northern direction of Sapta-Sindhu beyond the Himālaya, the following geological evidence collected from the *Encyclopædia Britannica* is adduced here :

"There can be no reasonable doubt (1) that the area of the Caspian must have formerly been much more extensive than at present ; (2) and that it must at some time have had free communication with the Ocean. It was long since pointed out by Pallas that the presence of salt lakes, dry saline deposits, and sea-shells of the same species as those now inhabiting the Caspian, over a very large extent of the steppes to the east, north and west of the present basin, can only be accounted for on such a hypothesis, and he traced out what may probably be regarded as a northern shore-line, along the base of the Mongodjar Hills. Further, the fauna of the Caspian corresponds so remarkably with that of the Black Sea on the one side, and with that of the Sea of Aral on the other, that it can scarcely be doubted that they were formerly in free communication with one another, and the line of this communication can be pretty certainly traced out by the peculiar lowness of the level. Thus between the Caspian and the Black Sea, or rather the Sea of Azoff, it would have lain across the low-lying portion of the steppe which is at present a receptacle for the drainage of the surrounding area, forming the long and shallow Lake Manytsch. And between the Caspian and the Aral Sea, it probably followed both the northern and the southern borders of Ust-Urt, which would thus form an isolated platform. If

the elevation of level were sufficiently great to raise the water of Lake Aral to the height which it had in former times, (as is shown by various clearly discernible landmarks), it would have overflowed a large area to the south also, and of this again, some parts of the coast-line are traceable. A very slight elevation would bring it into communication with the Arctic Sea." ¹

The writer then goes on "There is much to support this view not only in the writings of ancient geographers and in the incidental notices which have been gleaned from the records of early travel, but also in the physical relation of the three basins, now forming separate seas.....It is a fact of no little interest that the existence of a communication between the Aralo-Caspian basin and the Northern Ocean was most distinctly affirmed by Strabo and other ancient geographers." ²

"Now as there is strong reason to suspect, from the evidence of recent volcanic change in that locality, that the opening of the Bosphorus took place within a period which geologically speaking was very recent, it does not at all seem improbable that this event (which some writers identify with the deluge of Deucalion) was the commencement of a series of changes by which the 'Asiatic Mediterranean' came to be divided into three separate basins which now constitute its 'survivals.'" ³

The writer means to say that the level of the European Mediterranean Sea having been lower than that of the Asiatic Mediterranean, the opening of the Bosphorus caused the water of the latter to be drained off into the former, until both attained the same level. This draining off of the water from the Asiatic Mediterranean left its shallow portions dry, and converted the sea into isolated lakes, and its dry basins into extensive steppes. The writer then arrives at the following conclusion: "Thus it would appear that the condition of the

¹ *Ency Brit.*, Vol. V, pp. 179-180 (Ninth Edition).

² *Ibid.*, p. 180.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 180.

Aralo-Caspian area must have undergone very considerable alterations *within the historic period.*"¹ The same writer elsewhere says: "The saltness, not only of the water of the Caspian and Aral Seas, but of that of the numerous lakes still remaining in the most depressed spots formerly covered by the Asiatic Mediterranean, together with the large admixture of salt in the sand that covers what is now its dried-up bed, can only be accounted for on the supposition that this Asiatic Mediterranean *was itself a 'survival' of the extension of the oceanic area properly so-called,*—retaining not only much of its salinity, but a portion of its characteristic fauna. And this conclusion derives confirmation from the fact (ascertained by the researches of the Russian naturalist Bogdanoff) that the polar fauna may be traced through the succession of salt lakes lying to the north of the Aral Sea, and that its proportion increases as we approach the Polar Ocean."²

From the above excerpts, it is clear (*a*) that at an early geological epoch, a large sea connected with the Arctic Ocean had existed in Central Asia; (*b*) that at a later period, this sea was converted into an inland sea, covering a large area of Central Asia, and extending as far west as the Black Sea, and it continued to exist as an Asiatic Mediterranean down to the dawn of historical times; and (*c*) that a volcanic action having opened up the Bosphorus, and joined the Asiatic with the European Mediterranean, a vast quantity of water of the former was drained off into the latter, leaving the shallow parts of the former dry, and the deeper parts as disconnected and isolated lakes. Thus, the existence of a large sea to the northwest of Sapta-Sindhu and of the region inhabited by branches of the ancient Aryans is an undoubted geological fact, and proves the hoary antiquity of the land and of the R̥gveda.

That this Asiatic Mediterranean extended as far south-east as Turkestan will appear from the following extracts:

"Representatives of all the Tertiary formations are met with in Turkestan; but while in the highlands the strata are

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 181.

² *Ibid.*, p. 180.

coast-deposits, they assume an open-sea character in the low lands, and their rich fossil fauna furnishes evidence of the gradual shallowing of that sea, until at last, after the Sarmatian period, it became a close Mediterranean. During the Post-Pliocene period, the sea broke up into several parts united by narrow straits. The connexion of Lake Balkash with the Sea of Aral can hardly be doubted; but this portion of the great sea was the first to be divided. While the Sea of Aral remained in connexion with the Caspian, the desiccation of the Lake Balkash basin, and its break-up into smaller separate basins were already going on. The Quaternary Epoch is represented in vast morainic deposits in the valley of the Tianshan.....In the low lands, the Aral-Caspian deposits which it is difficult to separate sharply from the later Tertiary, cover the whole area. They contain shells of molluscs now inhabiting the Sea of Aral and in their petrographical features are exactly like those of the lower Volga. The limits of the Post-Pliocene Aral-Caspian Sea have not yet been fully traced. It extended some 200 miles north, and more than 90 miles east of the present Aral shores. A narrow strait connected it with Lake Balkash. The Ust-Urt Plateau and the Mugdjar (Mongodjar) mountains prevented it from spreading north-westward, and a narrow channel connected it along the Uzboi with the Caspian, which sent a broad gulf to the east, spread up to the Volga, and was connected by the Manytsch with the Black Sea basin. Great interest, geological and historical, thus attaches to the recent changes undergone by the basin." ¹

As regards Eastern Turkestan, the following extracts will be found interesting in connection with the existence of another large sea in Central Asia :

"Lob-nor now consists of two basins, but the largest of them, although it has an area four times as large as that of the Lake of Geneva, can hardly be called a lake, since its greatest depth is less than 20 feet, while reeds rise 20 feet above the thin film of water, and extend far beyond its shores.

¹ *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. XXIII, p. 634 (Ninth Edition).

In fact, the whole of the region, notwithstanding its considerable altitude above the ocean, has but recently emerged from under water. During the later portion of the Tertiary period, it was covered with one immense Mediterranean sea, and even during the Post-Pliocene period, was occupied by a lake...The desiccation of East Turkestan must have gone on, within historical time, at a much more rapid rate than geologists seem prepared to admit." ¹

The existence of vast inland seas in Central Asia down to recent geological times is thus undoubted. The question now is whether the region, inhabited by the ancient Aryans, extended as far as East Turkestan, close to the confines of the Central Asian seas. On this question, the following observations made by Lassen will throw some light:—

"It appears very probable that at the dawn of history, East Turkestan was inhabited by an Aryan population, the ancestors of the present Slavonic and Teutonic races, and a civilisation, not inferior to that of Bactriana, had already developed at that time in the region of the Tarim." ² Whether these Aryan people were the ancestors of the Slavonic and the Teutonic races is quite another matter with which we are not here concerned. All that we need note here is that a scholar like Lassen holds that at the dawn of history, East Turkestan was inhabited by an Aryan population.

I shall not, therefore, be wrong, if I conclude that the region inhabited by the ancient Aryans extended as far north as Bactriana and Eastern Turkestan in recent geological times that saw the early dawn of history.

From an examination and discussion of the above geological evidences is clearly proved the existence of the four seas, mentioned in the *R̥gveda*, round about the region, inhabited by the ancient Aryans, which included Sapta-Sindu on the south, Bactriana and Eastern Turkestan on the north, Gandhāra on the west, and the upper valleys of the Gangā and the Yamunā on the east. The age of the *R̥gveda*, therefore, must be as old as the existence of these four seas in ancient times.

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 638.

² Lassen's *Indische Alterthums-Kunde*.

CHAPTER III.

RGVEDIC EVIDENCE SUPPORTING THE GEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE AND PROVING THE VAST ANTIQUITY OF SAPTA-SINDHU.

It is a pity that well-known Sanskrit scholars, both European and Indian, have sometimes studied the *R̥gveda* in a most superficial and perfunctory manner, and drawn conclusions which are not at all warranted by the evidences found in the sacred Scripture. For instance, Professor A. A. Macdonell in his *History of Sanskrit Literature* has observed that the Indo-Aryans were not directly familiar with the ocean. I will quote his very words below :—

“The southward migration of the Aryan invaders does not appear to have extended at the time when the hymns of the *R̥gveda* were composed, much beyond the point where the united waters of the Punjab flow into the Indus. *The ocean was probably known only from hearsay*, for no mention is made of the numerous mouths of the Indus, and fishing, one of the main occupations on the banks of the Lower Indus at the present day, is quite ignored. The word for fish (*matsya*) indeed only occurs once, though various kinds of animals, birds, and insects are so frequently mentioned. This accords with the character of the rivers of the Punjab and Eastern Kabulistan, which are poor in fish, while it contrasts with the intimate knowledge of fishing betrayed by the *Yajur-veda*, which was composed when the Aryans had spread much farther to the east, and doubtless also to the south. The word which later is the regular name for ‘Ocean’ (*Sam-udra*) seems, therefore, in agreement with the etymological sense (‘collection of waters’), to mean in the *R̥gveda* only the lower course of the Indus, which, after receiving the waters of the Punjab, is so wide that a boat in mid-stream is invisible from the bank. It has been noted in recent times that the natives in this region speak of the

river as the 'Sea of Sindhu,' and indeed the word Sindhu (river) in several passages of the *R̥gveda* has practically the sense of the 'sea.' Metaphors such as would be used by a people familiar with the ocean are lacking in the *R̥gveda*. All references to navigation point only to the crossing of rivers in boats, impelled by oars, the main object being to reach the other bank (*pāra*). This action suggested a favourite figure, which remained familiar throughout Sanskrit Literature. Thus one of the poets of the *R̥gveda* invokes Agni with the words 'Take us across all woes and dangers as across the river (Sindhu) in a boat'; and in the later Sanskrit Literature one who has accomplished his purpose or mastered his subject is very frequently described as 'having crossed the farther shore' (*pārāga*). The *Atharva-veda*, on the other hand, contains some passages showing that its composers were acquainted with the ocean." ¹

I must candidly confess here that I was never more surprised in my life than when I first read the above paragraph. For, I have come across innumerable passages in the *R̥gveda*, in which the word *Samudra*, meaning the Sea, occurs. Professor Macdonell contends, from the so-called etymological meaning of the word *Samudra* (collection of waters), that the lower course of the Indus, united by its several tributaries, was denoted by that name; but if that were so, what would be the meaning of the "Eastern and the Western Samudras," in both of which the deity named *Kēśi*, or the Snn, used to dwell? (Rv. x. 136, 5). If the Indus be identified with the *Western Samudra*, what was the *Purva Samudra*? There was no large river like the Indus in the eastern part of the Punjab; and the Sarasvati, and the Gangā and the Yamunā in their upper courses near Sapta-Sindhu, were only small streams in comparison with the Indus. What would again be the meaning of "the four *Samudras*" mentioned in Rv. ix. 33, 6 and Rv. x. 47, 2? The Sindhus (or rivers) were

¹ *History of Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 143-144. Prof. E. W. Hopkins is also of the same opinion. *Vide Appendix* to this Chapter.

enumerated as *seven* in the R̥gveda, and not four; and "the four Samudras," if they were simply rivers, would be quite meaningless. The distinction between the words *Sindhu* and *Samudra* has been most clearly drawn in Rv. viii. 6, 4 (*Samudrāyeva Sindhavah*)¹, where it has been said that all mankind bow before Indra through fear, as the *Sindhus* i.e. the rivers, (or the mouths of the Indus, if you please), do their obeisance to the *Samudra* i.e. the Ocean; as also in Rv. viii. 92, 22, where it has been said that all offerings of *Soma* reach Indra, just as all the *Sindhus* enter into the *Samudra*. Further in Rv. iii. 36, 7, it has been said that the *Sindhus* or rivers fill the *Samudra* or ocean with their waters. The word *Sindhu* has also been used in the R̥gveda to denote the sea, as, for instance, when the Aśvins have been called *Sindhu-mātaraḥ* (Rv. i. 46, 2), 'sons whose mother is Sindhu' or the Ocean, because they, being the precursors of the Dawn,² were seen to come out, as it were, from the womb of the Eastern Sea. Here *Sindhu* cannot mean "the Indus," because the Aśvins do not rise from the western horizon; nor does it mean "river," because there was no river of wide expanse like the Indus in the east, from whose bosom they might be said to rise. But it is just possible that the idea of the sea was first obtained by the ancient Aryans of the Pleistocene Epoch from the sea that occupied the Indus trough, which was called *Sindhu*, and that afterwards when that sea was filled up with alluvium, and the present river *Sindhu* occupied its place, it was called by the old name, and the term *Sindhu* came to denote a river as well as a sea. To avoid this confusion, however, the word *Samudra* was probably afterwards coined to mean the ocean. But the etymological meaning of the word is not "a collection of waters" but a vast expanse of water that wets and floods the dry land by the rising and swelling tides. And

¹ Rv. viii. 6, 4:—समुद्रायैवे सिन्धो विमानन्त्यः कृष्टवः । उतुद्राविव सिन्धवः ।
Cf. also ix 86, 8; x, 65, 13; 66, 11.

² Rv. i. 34, 10; 46, 1; and x. 39, 12.

this is the chief characteristic feature of an ocean or sea. It is in this sense that the word is used in the verse, in which the river Sarasvatī has been described to flow from the mountains into the sea (*Samudra*), meaning an arm of the Rājputānā Sea; as also in the verse where all rivers (*Sindhus*) are said to be flowing into the *Samudra*. A Ṛṣi expresses his wonder that all the flowing rivers cannot fill up the *one Ocean*. (Rv. v. 85, 6; cf. i. 13, 2). The sea or *Samudra* was supposed by the ancient Aryans not only to extend over the earth, but also over the vast expanse of the sky in the form of watery vapours, from which water descended on the earth in torrents of rain. (Rv. x. 98, 5, 12). This gives us a pretty good idea that the Aryans formed of the wide extent of the ocean, which was certainly larger than the width of the largest river in Sapta-Sindhu. The unfathomable depth of the sea was also used as a simile to denote the magnitude of one's greatness (Rv. vii. 33, 8). As regards fishing, there is a whole Śukta (viii. 67) that describes the plaintive prayer of fishes, caught in a net. It might be a figurative description of the pitiful cry of men caught in the meshes of sin and worldliness. But such a figure of speech would never have been used, if fishing with nets was not a familiar scene in ancient Sapta-Sindhu. Fish is also mentioned in Rv. x. 68, 8. Professor Macdonell's assumption, therefore, that the ancient Aryans were not directly acquainted with the ocean is simply gratuitous and not warranted by evidence. The very numerous mention of the word *Samudra* in the R̥gveda quite accords with their perfect knowledge of the four seas that surrounded the land of Sapta-Sindhu. That the Aryans navigated the seas and were acquainted with the art of navigation would appear from the fact that they had sea-going vessels, propelled by one hundred oars (Rv. i. 116, 5), and also furnished with wings, *i.e.*, sails (Rv. x. 143, 5). The dimension of a vessel that is propelled by one hundred oars would be very much larger than that of an ordinary river-craft intended and used

for crossing the Indus even at the time of her highest flood. The Aśvins are said to have rescued Bhujyu who was shipwrecked in the sea, and brought him to the shore in their hundred-oared boat after voyaging for *three days and nights*. (Rv. i. 116, 4). This sea (*Samudra*) has been described as without support, without any land or shores, and without any object that can be grasped for protection.¹ It was, in fact, a shoreless and limitless ocean, with nothing but water and water on every side. Islands (*Dvīpas*) have also been mentioned in the R̥gveda (i. 169, 3). The Aryan merchants used to "plough" the seas with their vessels in quest of wealth (Rv. i. 56, 2), and they offered prayers to the Ocean before undertaking a voyage (Rv. iv. 55, 6). Merchants possessed fleets of merchantmen which they sent across the seas for the purposes of trade. (Rv. i. 48, 3). It is said that Bhujyu, at the direction of his father, King Tugra, organized an expedition to punish some recalcitrant islanders, and it was during this voyage that he was shipwrecked and rescued by the Aśvins (*Sāyana*). Indra is said to have crossed the ocean and brought back to the shores of Sapta-Sindhu Yadu and Turvaś who had left their country and lived on the *farther shores of the ocean* as unanointed kings, probably in a new colony of their own. (Rv. iv. 30, 17; and vi. 20, 12). They were thus rescued from barbarism. Into which they had probably been relapsing, cut off as they were from their own kith and kin by the intervening sea (Rv. i. 54, 6). Vasiṣṭha is said to have made a sea-voyage with Varuṇa, and he himself has described how the voyage was enjoyed, and the vessel rocked and rolled over the waves. (Rv. vii. 88, 3.). Varuṇa

¹ The verse (Rv. i. 116, 5) is as follows:—

अथारक्षये तद्वीरविद्यामन्वासायै अक्षमये समुद्रे । अद्विषा जह्वमुभयानकं यतारिजा
नामनादक्षिणां वत् ॥

The literal translation of the above verse is as follows:—

"This exploit you achieved, Aśvins, in the ocean where there is nothing to give support, nothing to rest upon, nothing to cling to: that you brought Bhujyu, sailing in a hundred-oared ship to his father's house."

was the Lord of the Ocean, living below the waters (Rv. vii. 49, 4), in a palace with a thousand doors or entrances (Rv. vii. 88, 5) which probably mean the thousand rivers that fall into it. He is said to have stretched the ocean (Rv. vii. 87, 6), and *known the different routes or lines*, along which ships were navigated. (Rv. i. 25, 7). As Varuṇa was identified with the wide ocean below, so he was also identified with the expanded sky of the night, with his thousand eyes glittering and sparkling in the darkness in the shape of the stars. From the above references, it would be quite clear to our readers that the ocean was an object familiar to the R̥gvedic Aryans, and this is quite consistent, as I have said, with the existence of the four seas round about ancient Sapta-Sindhu. Do not the above evidences thoroughly contradict Professor Macdonell's assumption that the ancient Aryans knew the ocean only from hearsay and had no direct knowledge of it? This is a glaring instance and proof positive of the way in which wrong judgments are sometimes formed through bias and pre-conceived ideas.¹

Besides the mention of the four seas, there are many other evidences in the R̥gveda to prove the antiquity of the Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu. That they regarded the land as their original home would appear from the fact that the region between the Sarasvatī and the Sindhu (the Indus) was called the "God-fashioned region, or source of life and production." (*Devakṛta Yoni*).² The descriptive phrase occurs in Rv. iii.

¹ In this connection, it will not be out of place to mention here Professor Wilson's views on the subject: "They (the R̥gvedic Aryans) were a maritime and mercantile people.....Not only are the *Sāhitas* familiar with the ocean and its phenomena, but we have merchants described as pressing earnestly on board ship for the sake of gain, and we have a naval expedition against a foreign island or continent (*dvīpa*) frustrated by a ship-wreck." (Wilson's Translation of the R̥gveda. Intro: p. xli, Second Ed. 1860).

² *Yoni* here means *gṛha* or abode (vide Yāska's *Nighanta* iii, 4). *Yoni* also means "water," and *Devakṛta Yoni* may mean "water made by the Gods," in other words, "the ocean." But the meaning that the rivers are advancing towards the "God-made home or region" of the Aryans seems more appropriate, as it is supported by Manu who describes the original home of the Aryans as "*Devanirmīta Deśa*" or God-fashioned region. All regions have been made by God, but the region specially made for the Aryans to live in has been described as *Devakṛta Yoni* or *Devanirmīta Deśa*.

33, 4, where the two rivers *Bipās* and the *Sutudri* (the Beas and the Sutlej) have been made to say that, swollen with water, they are advancing towards the "God-fashioned region."¹ This sentiment about the sacredness of the region was in a later age echoed by Manu in his celebrated *Saṃhitā*, in which the region between the *Sarasvatī* and the *Dr̥ṣadvatī* has been described as the "God-fashioned country" (*Devanirmīta deśa*).² Further, in Rv. ii. 41, 16, the *Sarasvatī* has been described as "the best of mothers, the best of rivers, and the best of Goddesses,"³ and in verse 17 of the same *Sukta*, this sacred river has been described to be the support of all (life), which probably means that all animals were evolved in the region of the *Sarasvatī*.⁴ This certainly accords with the geological fact that the Punjab was the most ancient life-producing region in India. It will be in the recollection of our readers that in the famous Siwālik beds within the sub-Himālayan range have been found the vast stores of extinct mammalia, and it is significant that the *Sarasvatī* has her source in the Himālaya in that region. The *R̥gvedic* Aryans must have been aware of the existence of these vast stores of extinct mammalia to justify them in saying that the *Sarasvatī* was the source and support of all life.

Another evidence (though of a negative kind) of the antiquity of the *R̥gveda* and of the Indo-Aryans is the total absence of any mention in it of the great Deluge which is referred to in the *Atharva-veda* and related in the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* and later Sanskrit Literature, such as the *Mahābhārata* and the *Purāṇas*. A Deluge is also mentioned in the

¹ Rv. iii. 33.4 :—

एषा यन् पयसा पिबन्नामा यनुवीरिं दिव्यं चरन्तीः।

² सरस्वतीहवामोर्वैवमवीर्यद्वारम् ।

तद्देवमिर्मितं दिवं ब्रह्मावत्तं प्रचक्षते ॥

(*Manu ii, 17.*)

³ Rv. ii. 41. 16 :—

अमृतमि मदीयमि देवितमि सरस्वति

⁴ Rv. ii. 41. 17 :—

त्वं विश्वं सरस्वति पिबा तुंभि दिव्याम् ।

Gilgamesh Epic of Babylonia, in another Babylonian account of it left by Berossus, in the ancient flood-legend of Egypt, with which the name of Tem, "the father of human beings" is associated, in the classical accounts of Greece, and lastly in the Biblical account of the Great Flood from which Noah saved himself along with the seeds of all floras and faunas. Whether all these different accounts refer and point to the one and same event, it is very difficult to ascertain; but there can be no doubt that the occurrence was a real event, at any rate, in India. Whatever may have been the time of its happening, one thing stands out clear and certain, that the Deluge as mentioned in the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa*, occurred long after the hymns of the *Ṛgveda Samhitā* had been composed; for if it had happened before or during the period of their composition, there was every likelihood of its being mentioned or referred to somewhere in the *Ṛgveda*. The accounts of the flood as found in the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa*, and in the Babylonian story of Berossus and the Gilgamesh Epic differ in one material aspect, which is worth mentioning here. While Manu's Flood seems to have been caused by the swelling of the sea, situated to the south of the land in which he lived, and carried his ship *northward* to the "Northern Mountain" (*Uttara Giri*), meaning of course the Himalaya, the Babylonian account of Berossus speaks of "a deluge of rain" which continued for "three days," and the Epic of Gilgamesh also mentions of "heavy rains" pouring down from "black clouds," which made the earth look like the sea. The Biblical account of the flood similarly mentions that it was caused by heavy down-pourings for "forty days and forty nights" (Genesis, vii. 12). The Indian Flood, not having been caused by heavy rainfall, must therefore have been caused by violent seismic action which seems to have some connection with the partial disappearance of the Rājputānā Sea, situated to the south of Sapta-Sindhu. A portion of the bed of this sea was probably suddenly upheaved, displacing and scattering the vast volume of water, which caused a flood in Sapta-

Sindhu, and covered the lower regions of the Himālaya for sometime. Manu's ship was carried inland by the flood and is said to have been stranded on a low peak of the Himālaya on the north of Kashmir, which is known as *Manoravataraṇam*, or the place where Manu disembarked from his ship. Though much of the flood-water returned to the sea through the river-channels, some of it must have been left in the hollows and low lands of the plains, where it stagnated. The rapid desiccation of this sea-water very likely generated vast volumes of watery vapours, which, having partly been carried westward, might have been precipitated in Babylonia in a deluge of rain, causing a flood in that country. The rest, having been carried northward, was probably precipitated in Aīryana Vaejo and Bactriana as snow, causing those regions to be invaded by ice. But there is reason to suppose that the flood in Sapta-Sindhu, and the Deluge in Babylonia were not simultaneous events. The flood in Sapta-Sindhu, if caused by the partial upheaval of the bed of the Rājputānā Sea, and the displacement of its waters, must have occurred long before the Deluge took place in Babylonia, as the existence of Tertiary and Secondary strata across the desert of Rājputānā from Sind towards the flank of the Aravalli mountains would seem to indicate. The Deluge in Babylonia must therefore be traced to some other cause, which, I believe, was the desiccation of the Central Asiatic Mediterranean Sea in Eastern Turkestan, of which Lake Lob Nor is the remnant. The vast volumes of watery vapours, thus generated, probably passed southward and caused a deluge of rain in Babylonia, of which mention is made in the Gilgamesh Epic and the account of Berossus. Noah's flood which also was caused by heavy downpours of rains may have been a simultaneous event with the Babylonian and the Egyptian floods. In Ancient Greece, according to Xenophon, there were no less than five deluges, and the last that happened in the reign of Deucalion "was produced by the inundation of the water of the river Peneus whose regular course was stopped by an

earthquake near Mount Ossa and Olympus." and "is supposed to have happened 1503 years B.C." ¹ The opening of the Bosphorus, which caused the water of the Aralo-Caspian Sea to flow into the European Mediterranean, must also have occasioned an inundation of the low-lying coasts of Asia Minor, Africa, and Greece, facing the Mediterranean. If, as is supposed by some European savants, the opening of the Bosphorus took place in the reign of Deucalion about 1503 B.C., the disappearance of the undivided Aralo-Caspian Sea which extended as far as the Black Sea must have occurred in historical times, and the theory of Professor Max Müller and others about the Central Asiatic home of the Aryans would thus fall to the ground, in as much as Central Asia would not afford sufficient pasturage to the cattle of a large pastoral people as the ancient Aryans are supposed to have been, and especially because we find them already settled in Sapta-Sindhu long before that event. As Dr. Isaac Taylor remarks: "A semi-nomadic pastoral people, such as the primitive Aryans doubtless were, must have required a vast space to nurture the cattle necessary for their support. A Tartar family in Central Asia requires three hundred heads of cattle, and occupies rather more than three thousand acres. Hence a tribe consisting of 10,000 people would occupy from 4,000 to 6,000 square miles."² North-Western Asia and Central Asia, having been in ancient times covered by large seas, would not afford the pastoral Aryans sufficient space for themselves and their cattle, but the level plains of the Punjab, intersected as they are by broad rivers, would afford them such space.

It may be urged that to prove the antiquity of the *R̥gveda* from the absence of any mention of the Deluge in that sacred work would be an instance of *argumentum ex silentio*; for the event may have occurred within the long period during

¹ Lemprière's Classical Dictionary, p. 200.

² Taylor's *Origin of the Aryans*, p. 15.

which the hymns were composed, though there was no necessity for mentioning it in any hymn, simply because the Ṛgveda was not a chronicle of the principal events of the age. There is undoubtedly some force in this argument, especially as the event has been referred to in the *Atharva-veda*, which, however, is admittedly a later work than the Ṛgveda,¹ though it is undoubtedly older than the *Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa* and the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa*, in which it has been referred to more than once. It is indeed extremely difficult to try to fix the period of time in which the flood took place or the Rājputānā sea disappeared. But it may be safely surmised that it took place long after some of the most ancient hymns of the Ṛgveda had been composed, for we find mention made in the latter of the Sarasvatī and the Śutudrī (Rv. iii. 33, 2) flowing into the sea, which could be no other than the Rājputānā Sea. These two rivers must have changed their courses after the upheaval of the sea-bed, the one meandering alongside of the newly thrown-up sand-banks in a channel running parallel to the Indus-bed until it was finally choked up by gradually drifting sand, while the other swerving towards the west and joining the Indus at the confluence of her tributaries. If the partial disappearance of the Rājputana Sea was synchronous with the flood, and the sea be proved to have existed down to the Quaternary Era, the flood must have occurred sometime in that Era, long long before Noah's Deluge or the flood in Babylonia took place.

Another evidence of the antiquity of the Ṛgveda and of the Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu is the reference in some of the hymns to extensive seismic disturbances, causing upheavals and depressions of land and frequent earthquakes of great intensity. In Rv. ii. 12, 2, we read that the great Indra made the agitated and troubled earth firm, and controlled the angry mountains that also must have shown signs of agitation and volcanic

¹ The *Atharva-veda* mentions the *Magadhas* and the *Angas* (v. 22), the inhabitants of the countries which were under the sea when the Ṛgveda was composed.

action.¹ In Rv. ii. 17, 5, it has been stated that Indra made the shifting mountains immovable by his prowess.² The word for mountains in the original is *parvatān*, which has also been used in the R̥gveda to mean 'clouds,' in as much as they look like mountains. The above verse may, therefore, be also interpreted to mean that Indra made the shifting clouds immovable before pouring down rain. But read the following translation of Rv. i. 63, . :—"All created objects and animals, the mountains, and *all other hard and large objects that exist*, trembled through fear of thee (Indra) like the rays of the sun in the sky."³ In this hymn the word *girayah* does not mean "clouds" but really hard and solid mountains. Read again the following translation of Rv. i. 62, 5.—"O Indra, thou hast levelled down the high grounds of the earth."⁴ These

¹ Rv. ii. 12. 2 is as follows :—

यः पृथिवीं व्यसमानामहन्व्यः परितान्प्रकुपितो अरभ्णान् । यो अन्तरिक्षं विमलं
वरीयो योयामसभ्राह्म जगस्रद्वः ॥

The English translation of the above is as follows :—

"He who fixed firm the moving earth, who tranquilized the incensed mountains; who spread the spacious firmament; who consolidated the heaven; he, men, is Indra."

² Rv. ii. 17, 5 is as follows :—

स प्राचीनान्यवेतां हृदीजसाधराचीनमल्लणादपामपः । आधारमन्पृथिवीं विजृम्भाय
समस्तान्मयाद्यामवसतः ॥

The English translation is as follows :—

"By his strength he fixed the wandering mountains he directed the downward course of the waters; he upheld the earth the nurse (of all creatures) and by his craft he stayed the heaven from falling."

³ Rv. i. 63, 1 :—

त्वं महाहृदयोऽयमैवाज्ञानमः पृथिवीचमंधाः ।

यदधते विश्वं गिरयश्चिदभ्रा मियाहन्वहासः किरणानैजन् ॥

"Indra, thou art the mighty one, who becoming manifest in (the hour of) alarm, didst sustain by energies heaven and earth; then through (fear of thee) all creatures and the mountains, and all other *vast and solid* things, trembled, like the (tremulous) rays of the Sun."

⁴ Rv. i. 62, 5 —

विभ्रज्या अप्रमथ्य हृदसागृहिषी रज उपरमसभाय ॥

"Thou hast made straight the elevations of the earth."

Read also R̥g. iii. 30. 9.

acts of the great Indra undoubtedly refer to violent earthquakes and volcanic actions. It can thus be inferred that the ancient Aryans were pretty familiar with frequent earthquakes of great intensity, that caused marked alterations in the landscape and the physical features of the country by depressing high grounds, uplifting hills or shifting them to other places. The following extracts from the *Encyclopædia Britannica* will be found interesting in this connection: "The great disturbance which has resulted in the formation of the existing chain of the Himalayas took place after the deposition of the Eocene beds. Disturbances even greater in amount occurred after the deposition of the Pliocene beds. The eocenes of the sub-Himalayan range were deposited upon uncontorted Palæozoic rocks, but the whole has since been violently disturbed. There are some indications that the disturbing forces were more severe to the eastward during middle Tertiary times, and that the *main action to the westward was of later date*. It seems highly probable that the elevation of the mountain ranges and the depression of the Indo-Gangetic plains were closely related.....Probably both are due to almost contemporary movements of the earth's crust. The alluvial deposits prove depression in quite recent geological times; and within the Himalayan region, earthquakes are still common, while in the Peninsular India, they are rare."¹ The recent violent earthquake in the Kangra valley, that caused very widespread destruction, corroborates this view.

We can therefore safely conclude that if the Aryans lived in Sapta-Sindhu even in Pleistocene times, they witnessed violent seismic disturbances, resulting in the elevation of mountains and the depression of high grounds, all of which they attributed to the prowess of the dreaded Indra. The ancient Vedic bards also attributed to Indra the acts of causing the Indus in her upper course to flow northward (Rv. ii. 15, 6) and of cutting with his thunderbolt paths

¹ *Ency. Brit* vol. xii, p. 786 (Ninth Edition).

through rocky barriers for all the rivers of Sapta-Sindhu to flow into the ocean. (Rv. ii. 15, 3.) The Indus now flows in a north-western direction on the north of Kashmir; but probably in ancient times, she had a direct southward course which must have been obstructed by rocks falling into her bed or new rocks or hills rising across it, thereby changing her course northward.

There are many other R̥gvedic evidences to prove its antiquity, which will be dealt with in the next chapter.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER III.

Professor, E. W. Hopkins in his work entitled *The Religions of India* (1895), thus comments on the R̥gvedic Aryans' knowledge of the ocean (p. 34):

"Some scholars believe that this people had already heard of the two oceans, (*i.e.*, the Bay of Bengal and the Arabian Sea). This point again is doubtful in the extreme. No descriptions imply a knowledge of ocean, and the word for ocean means merely a 'confluence' of waters, or in general a great oceanic body of water like the air. As the Indus is too wide to be seen across, the same may apply in most cases to this river." The hollowness of this view, entertained by Prof. Macdonell also, has been exposed in this chapter.

With regard to *the Eastern and the Western Samudras*, mentioned in Rv. x. 136, 5, in which the God *Kēśi*, (*i.e.*, the Sun) is said to dwell, Prof. Hopkins says (p. 34): "An allusion to 'eastern and western floods,' which is held by some to be conclusive evidence for a knowledge of the two seas, is taken by others to apply to the air-oceans." But the air-ocean is really one and not two, extending over the *antarikṣa* or the sky from the east to the west uninterruptedly, and there is no reason why the Vedic bard should divide it into two, when the Sun may be said to dwell in it all along in his journey from east to west. Prof. Hopkins, probably realising the absurdity of this interpretation, proceeds to explain the passage in his own way: "The expression may apply simply to rivers, for it is said that the Vipāś and Śutudri empty into the 'ocean' *i.e.*, the Indus, or the Śutudri's continuation. (Rv. iii. 33, 2)." The word in the verse is *Samudra*, and it is quite probable that in those days the Śutudri like the Sindhu and the Sarasvatī flowed directly into the arm of the Arabian Sea that ran up the modern province of Sind, and was called *Samudra*. The Śutudri, as has already been pointed out, must have deflected her course towards the west and joined the Sindhu after the upheaval of the bed of the Rajputana Sea. If the Sindhu was the Western *Samudra* or "flood" as translated by Prof. Hopkins, what was the Eastern *Samudra* or

"flood," for there was no large river like the Indus on the east? This question remains unanswered. The Professor says: "One late verse alone speaks of the Sarasvatī pouring into the ocean, and this would indicate the Arabian Sea." But in the foot-note, he says: "Here the Sarasvatī can be only the Indus"—a view followed also by Ragozin. If the Sarasvatī was the Sindhu, how is it that they have been mentioned in the same verse (Rv. x. 64, 9) along with the Sarayū as different rivers? This only goes to show the extreme length scholars are apt to go in order to prove their pet theory. If they made an effort to understand the meaning of the passage in the light of the results of geological investigations, they would never have identified the sea into which the Sarasvatī flowed with the Arabian Sea, or the Sarasvatī with the Indus. The Sea, as we have seen, was no other than the Rājputānā Sea, and the Sarasvatī was the same river as she is at present, though she is now merely a skeleton of her former greatness in consequence of a different distribution of land and water, and great climatic changes in recent times. The Western scholars have proceeded on the assumption that the distribution of land and water and the condition of the rivers in the Punjab are nearly the same now as they were in Ṛgvedic times, and not being able to harmonize the Ṛgvedic description of the Sarasvatī with her present attenuated condition, have sometimes identified her with the Indus, and sometimes with the Avestic Harahvati, the name of a river in ancient Arachosia. "The Sarasvatī river" says Prof. Hopkins, "may have been originally one with the Arghandab (on which is Kāndāhār), for the Persian name of this river (s becomes k) is Harahvati, and it is possible that it was really this river, and not the Indus which was first lauded as the S^{ar}asvatī." (p. 31). This again shows a hopeless confusion of ideas. If the Indus was the *Samudra* into which the Harahvati flowed, then it could not possibly be the *Western Samudra* into which the God *Keśi* sank down to rest; for admittedly the Ṛgvedic Aryans knew of lands, mountains and rivers, situated in Arachosia to the west of the Indus, over which the Sun shone. The rising and the setting of the Sun can only be connected with seas or wide expanses of water, whose farther shores were unknown and invisible, and which presented a boundless appearance. This condition could not be fulfilled in the case of the Indus in the west or any river in the east of Sapta-Sindhu. The irresistible conclusion, therefore, is that the Eastern and the Western *Samudras* really refer to seas to the immediate east and west of Sapta-Sindhu. The Ṛgvedic Sarasvatī was the same as the present attenuated river of that name in the Punjab, as would appear from her joint mention with the *Dṛṣadvatī* and the *Āpayā* in Rv. iii, 23, 4. The Sarasvatī having been the most sacred river of the early Aryans,—made famous in sacred songs,—it is not improbable that the Iranian branch of the Aryans, after their expulsion from Sapta-Sindhu, named a river of Arachosia into which they had migrated, after the most sacred river of the mother-country. As regards the two seas, the Eastern and the Western, Prof. Hopkins has fallen into an error by identifying them respectively with

the Bay of Bengal and the present Arabian Sea, whose knowledge on the part of R̥gvedic Aryana cannot be supported by any internal evidence of the R̥gveda. If he could only identify them with the Eastern Sea over the Gangetic trough, and an arm of the Arabian Sea running up the present province of Sind, he would have found the R̥gvedic description of the sea quite consistent. He is probably right in saying that "as a body, the Aryana of the R̥gveda were certainly not acquainted with either ocean," namely, the Arabian Sea or the Bay of Bengal. But his interpretation of the words, *Samudra* and *Sarasvati*, like that of Prof. Macdonell and other Vedic scholars, is undoubtedly wrong and misleading.

I think that it will not be out of place to refer here to Professor Hermann Jacobi's objections against the geological evidence that I have made use of to prove the antiquity of the R̥gveda. In a communication, dated 26th February 1926, to the author, he has been pleased to observe: "I cannot agree with you in your opinions about the antiquity of the R̥gveda, even from geological considerations. For the upheaval of the country which caused the retreat of the Rajputana Sea, has certainly greatly altered the previous level of the land, and caused a new drainage of it. It is therefore not to be imagined that before that catastrophe the same rivers should already have existed in the Punjab as afterwards." I have already given a reply to this frank criticism of the learned Professor, which may be thus summarized: (1) The country (*vis.*, the Punjab) was not upheaved, but only a portion of the bed of the Rajputana Sea, which merely affected the lower courses of certain Punjab rivers, *vis.*, the Sarasvati, the Dṛśadvati, and the Sūtudri (or the Sutlej) in the Southern part of the country, which bordered upon that Sea. The R̥gveda mentions the Sarasvati and the Sūtudri as flowing directly into the Sea (Rv. vii. 95, 2; iii. 33, 2). The upheaval of the sea-bed in post-R̥gvedic times must have caused an obstruction to the lower channels of these rivers which had therefore, to deflect their courses towards the west. The Sarasvati at first meandered alongside of the newly thrown-up sand-banks, and pursued a course which was almost parallel to that of the Sindhu or the Indus, until she reached the Arabian Sea. The drifting sands, however, gradually choked up this newly formed channel, and the rain-fall having become scanty in consequence of the disappearance of the Sea in the south, the Sarasvati gradually became attenuated, and her current was not sufficiently strong to cut a way through the sand-choked channel which has since then remained abandoned. Traces of this abandoned channel are still discernible in the sands. The Sūtudri which had used to flow right into the Rajputana Sea in R̥gvedic times, having also met with obstructions caused by the upheaval of the sea-bed, subsequently deflected her course towards the west and joined the Indus at the confluence of her tributaries. (2) The upper courses of these rivers or any other river of the Punjab were not at all affected by the seismic forces that caused a partial upheaval of the bed of the Rajputana Sea, and remained very much the same as in R̥gvedic times. The alluvial deposit over the plain of the Punjab is not

very thick, compared with that of the Gangatic plain, and below this deposit occur "inliers of older rocks, rising as hills in the centre of the alluvial plain."¹ Mr. Oklham says that "the general facies of the fauna (found in the beds of the Salt Range of the Punjab) are of Cambrian age, and consequently the oldest in India, whose age can be determined with any approach to certainty."² (wide Ch. II p. 22). It would thus appear that the plain of the Punjab has remained much the same ever since the Cambrian age when life in its lowest form appeared in it, and has not been appreciably disturbed anywhere, excepting probably in some parts of the Himalayan region where seismic forces are still at work, as was evidenced by the recent great earthquake in the Kangra Valley. The R̥gvedic Aryans were also acquainted with such disturbances in the mountain-regions, which occasionally caused a change in the landscape and sometimes in the upper courses of some rivers in the mountainous valleys, reference to which has been made in the R̥gveda. The courses of the rivers in the plain, however, remained unaffected, excepting the lower courses of the Sarasvati and the Sutudri, as already stated. (3) Though a portion of the bed of the Rajputana Sea was upheaved in post-R̥gvedic times, evidences are not wanting to prove that upheavals and subsidences are going on in the borders of Rajputana and Cutch facing the Arabian Sea, even in recent times. Mr. Wadia, in his *Geology of India*, (pp. 30-31) writes: "The recent subsidence in 1819 of the Western border of the Rann of Cutch under the Sea, accompanied with the elevation of a large tract of land (the *Allah Bund*), is the most striking event of its kind recorded in India, and was witnessed by the whole population of the country. Here an extent of the country, some 2,000 square miles in area, was suddenly depressed to a depth of from 12 to 15 feet, and the whole tract converted into an inland sea. The Fort of Sindres, which stood on the shores, the scene of many a battle recorded in history, was also submerged underneath the waters, and only a single turret of that fort remained for many years, exposed above the Sea. As an accompaniment of the same movement, another area, about 600 square miles, was simultaneously elevated several feet above the plains into a mound which was appropriately described by the people 'the *Allah Bund*' (built of God).

"Even within historic times, the Rann of Cutch was a gulf of the sea, with surrounding coast-towns, a few recognisable relics of which yet exist. The gulf was gradually silted up, a process aided no doubt by a slow elevation of its floor, and eventually converted into a low-lying tract of land, which at the present day is alternately a dry saline desert for a part of the year, and a shallow swamp for the other part."

Mr. Wadia further says: "Rajputana affords a noteworthy example of the evolution of desert topography within comparatively recent geological times.

¹ *Memoirs of Geo. Survey of India*, Vol. xlii, Part 2, p. 8.

² *Manual of the Geology of India*, p. 109. Read also *The Imperial Gazetteer of India*, Vol. i, p. 53.

This change had been brought about by the great dryness that has overcome this region since Pleistocene times, leading to the intensity of eolian action on the surface." (pp. 33-34).

It is hoped that the above facts and evidences would throw a flood of light on the point raised by Professor Hermann Jacobi, and convince him that the upheaval of the bed of the Rajputana sea in post-R̥gvedic times, whether gradual or sudden at places, did not, to any appreciable extent, alter the level of the plain of the Punjab excepting near the sea-coast, or affect the courses of the Punjab rivers as they had been in R̥gvedic times, excepting the lower courses of the Sarasvati, the Dṛṣadvati and the Sutudri. The rocky and inflexible solid land-mass of the plain, below the thin layer of alluvium, does not appear to have been affected or disturbed in any way by seismic or volcanic actions and has remained very much the same as in ancient geological epochs.

Professor A. Berriedale Keith of Edinburgh University also does not attach any importance to the geographical evidence that I have cited in this book and in *R̥gvedic Culture*. In a communication to the author, dated 27th January 1926, he has been pleased to observe :

"I am afraid your speculations on the age of the R̥gveda do not convince. I do not think your geographical evidence needs or perhaps even admits the explanation which you give; the fact that for many generations no one has felt the difficulties you have raised and that most of us now do not appreciate them is an argument of considerable weight against their validity." I must frankly confess that I did not expect an observation like the above from the learned and renowned Professor. His words, I am afraid, savour of the doctrine of infallibility, and seem to indicate that simply because for many generations, no Vedic scholar has felt the difficulties I have raised, and most of the Western scholars now do not appreciate them, therefore the new facts and evidences that I have discussed cannot be valid! This is indeed "an argument of great weight against their validity." But has not the theory of the original cradle of the Aryans changed from generation to generation in the light of the discovery of fresh facts and evidences? And has not what was valid in one generation become invalid in another? The recent discovery of archaeological finds at Harappa in the Punjab and at Mahenjo Daro in Sind will presently make the current theory about the age of ancient Indian architecture invalid, and necessitate the re-writing of ancient Indian history, if Sir John Marshall is to be credited. Similarly, the geological and ancient geographical evidences that I have cited in explanation of certain geographical facts mentioned in the R̥gveda, have to be very carefully examined in the interests of historical truth, before they can be summarily dismissed. It is indeed very hard to have to change one's opinion which one has held and clung to during a whole life-time, but still one should be prepared to face and consider new facts and evidences, however belated may be their discovery, with an open mind. As I have elsewhere said: "There is nothing like finality in views that are mainly based on mere

Intelligent guesses, surmises, and probabilities rather than on positive and incontestable historical proofs, and there should be room enough for a fresh view, based on fresh materials, in an arena where so many have struggled and are still struggling for existence and recognition. Truth can only be arrived at, not certainly by stifling any independent opinion, boldly expressed and formulated, but by encouraging it and giving it a patient hearing."¹

¹ *Rgvedic Culture* : Preface, p. viii.

CHAPTER IV.

FURTHER RĠVEDIC EVIDENCE ABOUT THE ANTIQUITY OF THE ARYANS OF SAPTA-SINDEU.

Mr. B. G. Tilak in his *Orion* has proved from astronomical statements found in the Vedic Literature that "the Vernal Equinox was in the constellation of Mrga or Orion about 4,500 B.C.," when, he believes, some of the hymns of the Rġveda were composed. The evidence adduced by him has not, however, been regarded as conclusive by some European savants, though Sanskrit scholars like Professor Bloomfield, Dr. Bülher and others acknowledged the force of his argument. From a statement in the *Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa* (iii. 4.1.15) which says that "Bṛhaspati, or the Planet Jupiter, was first discovered when confronting or nearly occulting the star Tiṣya," Mr. V. B. Ketkar has shown that the observation was possible only at about 4,650 B. C., which goes to confirm independently Mr. Tilak's conclusions about the age of some of the hymns.¹ As Professor Bloomfield observed while noticing Mr. Tilak's *Orion* in his address on the occasion of the eighteenth anniversary of John Hopkin's University, "the language and literature of the Vedas is, by no means, so primitive as to place with it the real beginnings of Aryan life.....These in all probability and in all due moderation, reach back several thousands of years more."² This suggests the hoary antiquity of the Aryan civilisation, whether in Sapta-Sindhu or elsewhere, it does not matter. It should be borne in mind in this connection that the *Rġveda Saṃhitā* is only a collection of hymns which were composed not in any particular period, but in different periods of time, one group separated from another by probably thousands of years, and handed down to posterity from generation to generation. There is distinct mention in

¹ Tilak's *Arctic Home in the Vedas*, Preface p. ii.

² *Ibid* Preface p. ii

the R̥gveda of the hymns having come down from the ancestors of the Aryans from olden times, clothed in new language (Rv. iii. 39, 2). The composition of the earliest hymns, therefore, would take us back to several thousand years more than 4500 B. C., and "the real beginnings of Aryan life" would be assigned to time immemorial, during which long period the archaic language of the hymns, having proved unintelligible, had to be changed into Vedic Sanskrit. This inference is quite in accord with the geological facts mentioned in Chapter II, and other astronomical evidences found in the R̥gveda itself, which put down the Vṛṣākapi hymn (x. 86) to about 16,000 B. C., and a verse of the Marriage hymn (x. 85, 13) to about 15,000 B.C.¹

There are many other evidences of the antiquity of the R̥gveda and Sapta-Sindhu, some of which are enumerated below —

1. Indra is said to have given lands to the Aryans in Sapta-Sindhu to live in (Rv. iv. 26, 2), and protected them in every way by causing timely rains to fall, and the corn to grow. The rains, however, used to be withheld by Vṛtra, the demon of drought, in his capacious cloud-body, which caused great distress to the people; but Indra invariably came to their rescue by killing the demon and letting loose the flood of imprisoned waters. Vṛtra has been described in the R̥gveda as an *Ahi*, or serpent, and judging by his epithet *Deva* or 'bright' (Rv. i. 32, 12), which is seldom applied to a demon, it seems to me that he was probably identified by the anointed Vedic bards with the zig-zag lightning that flashed through black clouds, followed by a loud clap of thunder, which the Aryans imagined to have been produced by the hurling of the bolt against him by Indra in his deadly struggle with him. The demon, who has been described in several hymns as *māyābhi* or guileful, seemed always to elude the aim

¹ Vide Mr. D. Mukhopadhyāy's article on "The Hindu Nakṣatras" in the *Journal of the Department of Science* (vol. vi, pp. 19-20.) Published by the Calcutta University. Read also *R̥gvedic Culture*, Ch. i, pp. 37-38.

of Indra by as suddenly appearing in one place as disappearing from another. And very hard, long and arduous was the struggle that Indra waged against him. He succeeded, however, in the long run, in vanquishing the foe and laying him low on the ground, over which the released waters flowed, to the great delight of men and Gods. This Vṛtra-legend is as old as the R̥gveda, nay even older, as it came down to the Vedic hards from their predecessors of the hoariest antiquity. In Rv. i. 32, 1, the Vedic bard says: "I will relate the valiant deeds that Indra, the wielder of the thunderbolt, first performed." After this brief prelude, he proceeds to narrate them, saying that Indra slew Ahi, the serpent, and then caused rains to fall. The Ahi that he slew was the *first-born* of all the Ahis (*prathamajam ahinām*) (Rv. i. 32, 3). With the slaying of the Ahi, his trickeries also were destroyed, and Indra cleared the horizon of all his foes by causing the Sun and the Dawn to shine and the blue sky to appear (Rv. i. 32, 4). The dead body of Vṛtra fell down into the rivers, crushing them by its weight, and the glistening waters that he had encompassed within his body during his life-time, flowed over it, and it lay below them. The arch-enemy of Indra thus fell into "the long sleep" that knows no waking (Rv. i. 32, 10). After describing the defeat and death of the Ahi in the above hymns, the bard extols Indra's deeds by saying how he cleverly ward off the blows aimed at him by Vṛtra, by diffusing himself like a horse-tail,¹ and how he won the cows (*i.e.*, the rain-laden clouds or the solar rays) and the Soma juice, and how he *opened the flood-gates of the Seven Sindhus or rivers* (Rv. i. 32, 12). It would thus appear that the *first valorous deed of Indra was performed in the Land of the Seven Rivers or Sapta-Sindhu*, and it was there that Indra killed the *first-born* of the Ahis.

¹ This simile was probably suggested by the form of the lightning which branched off at the end. Indra to ward off the blow had also to diffuse himself like a horse-tail.

Now, this legend about the killing of the *first-born* of the *Ahis* in *Sapta-Sindhu*, handed down to the Vedic bard from his remote ancestors, takes us back at once to the dim past that witnessed the first dawning of the Aryan mind to a sensible realisation of the physical happenings in the world of the primitive Aryan thinker who seemed to have grasped and unravelled, for the first time, the mystery of clouds and lightning and thunder and rain-fall. Verily, the distressing drought was the work of the wicked Ahi who absorbed the "water of life" in his capacious cloud-body; and verily, it was the mighty Indra, the beneficent deity, who took up his dreadful thunderbolt to wage war against the powerful Ahi, and continued the struggle deftly and vigorously till he succeeded in vanquishing and laying him low. It was a grand discovery, probably the grandest to the primitive Aryan, opening up, as it did, a magnificent vista of thought and moral visions that went on widening in scope and grandeur with the progress of time. The discovery of the Ahi and Indra must have been simultaneous, and the Ahi whom Indra was first seen to slay necessarily became the *first-born of the Ahis*, who however appeared, year after year, by a mysterious process of resuscitation. But it was enough that he was slain for the time being, and the imprisoned waters released and the herd of cows, in the shape of the clouds (or the obstructed solar rays), set free and won back by the mighty Indra, and the bright Sun and the beautiful Dawn, and the bright blue sky freed from his trammels to gladden men's heart again. It was a most wonderful, glorious and beneficent deed that the great Indra performed for the benefit of the world, which deserved to be sung in joyous strains, and handed down to posterity to be sung for all time to come. And so was it sung in hymns, which were handed down from generation to generation, clothed in new and felicitous language as suited the taste and needs of ever-changing time,—a fact which one of the greatest bards of the *Rgveda* joyously proclaimed in the following beautiful verse which, for its

naïve simplicity and wealth of truth, possesses an intrinsic value of its own, not generally appreciated or recognised :¹

“(O Indra), the hymn, chanted long before (the rise of the Sun), that awakens (thee) by being sung at sacrifices, is old and has come down to us from our ancestors, clothed in white and graceful robes.” (Rv. iii. 39, 2.)

We need not at all wonder at the fact that this beneficent deed of the great Indra, together with the other valiant deeds that he performed for the good of the early Aryans who were struggling, through a mysterious impulse, towards light, should have made a deep and abiding impression on their mind, and raised Indra in their estimation to the first place in the hierarchy of their Gods. The ancient bards felt such a great enthusiasm for this all-powerful Deva as to make themselves his ardent votaries and ascribe to him the position of the Creator, who created the Sun and the Dawn, expanded and upheld the star-bespangled heavens, protected and sustained the animal and vegetable kingdoms by pouring down timely rains, made the agitated earth firm, kept the moving mountains in position, cut paths for the seven rivers to flow down into the sea, killed Vṛtra, the demon of drought, which earned for him the designation of *Vṛtrahan*, gave the Aryans land to live in, extirpated the Aryan non-believers, and unmannerly and half-savage nomads from Sapta-Sindhu, and helped his votaries to vanquish their enemies. All these glorious deeds were attributed to Indra, and the Aryans knew of no higher or more powerful deity than him. No wonder, therefore, that the worship of the other Gods were subordinated to his worship; and the ancient Aryans, in return for all his good and kindly acts, instituted the *Soma* sacrifice at which they offered him a special preparation of the Soma juice, the invigorating drink that made him strong and hilarious, and

¹ Rv. iii. 39 2:—

दिविचिदा दूषां जायमाना वि जगद्विविदमे अस्त्वमाना । भद्रा वस्त्वानुना वसाना
सवसज सनजा विस्त्रा धोः ॥

that he shared with all other Devas who helped him in his work. The Soma cult was as old as the worship of Indra, nay, even older, in as much as it is said that as soon as Indra was born of Aditi, he felt a strong craving for the Soma juice before he even thought of sucking his mother's breast (Rv. iii. 48, 2). If we fully realised the high estimation in which Indra was held by the ancient Aryans, we should not be at all surprised to come across such sentiments about him as the Vedic hards delighted to indulge in, *viz.*, "There can be no world without the great Indra" (Rv. ii. 16, 2), and "neither the heavens nor hundreds of earth can measure the greatness of Indra, nor a thousand suns reveal him" (Rv. viii. 70, 5). In fact, he was regarded as the first and foremost Deity, the first-born among the Devas, and the most powerful in heaven and earth (Rv. viii. 6, 41). It was this great Indra whose first great exploit was the killing of Vṛtra, the first-born of the Abhis, and this great and renowned exploit was performed in the Land of *Sapta-Sindhu*, and was first witnessed in the region watered by the Sarasvatī, as we shall presently see. The great antiquity of Indra-worship, coupled with the fact that Indra first performed his heroic deeds in *Sapta-Sindhu*, goes to prove the antiquity of the R̥gveda, and of the Aryans who lived in the land.

2. I have already said that the region between the Indus and the Sarasvatī was regarded as the God-fashioned birth-place of the Aryans (*Devakṛta Yoni*), and the strip of country between the Sarasvatī and the Dṛṣadvatī looked upon even in later times as the "God-created land" (*Devanirmita deśa*). We have also seen that the Sarasvatī was described as "the best of mothers, the best of rivers, and the best of all Goddesses". The ancient Aryans loved to cling to her valley, as a child loves to cling to its mother's breast, and many were the prayers offered to her that they might not have to go far away from her banks (Rv. vi. 61, 14). Now this attitude of the ancient Aryans towards this sacred stream and the region watered by her, touching as it is to a degree, bespeaks

a genuine love for her, as can only be felt for one's mother-land, and not for any land of one's adoption. Her great antiquity is also proved by the fact that it was in her region that the first-born Ahi or Vṛtra was seen by the early Aryan *Ṛsis* to be killed by Indra, which fact earned for her the name of *Vṛtraghñī* (or killer of Vṛtra), and made her share with Indra the glory of the deed and the appellation (Rv. vi. 61, 7). In verse 3 of the same Sūkta, she has been praised for having killed the detractors of the Devas, and the wily son of Vṛṣaya, i.e., Vṛtra. In the same verse she has also been praised, like Indra, for having provided lands to the Aryans. These deeds of the Sarasvatī were identical with those of the great Indra, and we shall not be wrong, if we hold that they were performed in the region watered by her.

Sarasvatī in the Ṛgveda is the name of not only the river and of the region watered by her, but also of Agni or the sacrificial Fire. The Fire, first kindled in the region of the Sarasvatī, was called by that name. Another name of the sacrificial Fire is *Bhāratī*, derived from the name of the land inhabited by the Bharatas, a renowned clan of the ancient sacrifice-loving Aryans, who afterwards became so advanced and powerful as to give their name to the whole country which has since been called *Bhāratavarṣa*. A third name of Agni is *Ilā*, derived from the region in which the great Manu performed his penances and sacrifices, and which, accordingly, came to be regarded as his spiritual preceptress (Rv. i. 31, 11). *Ilā* has been described as the daughter of Dakṣa, one of the Creators in the Vedic Pantheon, and identified with a region which was one of the best regions known to the ancient Aryans (Rv. iii. 23, 4). It would thus appear that these sacrificial Fires were called after the names of the regions in which they had been first kindled. *Ilā*, *Bhāratī* and *Sarasvatī* must have been contiguous regions, as the three Fires, called after their names, have invariably been mentioned together in the Ṛgveda, and the sacrificial Fire, *Ilā*, invoked to burn auspiciously in the homes of the Aryans living on the banks of the

Sarasvatī, the Dr̥ṣadvatī, and the Āpayā, and to bring as much prosperity to them as to the Aryans living in Ilā (Rv. iii. 23, 4). The very fact that Ilā derived her name from the daughter of Dakṣa Prajāpati, one of the Creators, and was regarded as the spiritual preceptress of the great Manu, the semi-divine being who is said to be presiding over the destinies of the human race, points to its vast antiquity. So is proved the vast antiquity of the region between the Sarasvatī and the Dr̥ṣadvatī, which has been described as *Brahmāvarta* in the Manu Saṃhitā (ii. 17), and is still regarded as the most sacred spot in all India. With regard to this spot, says Muir :

“And even to the north of the Vindhya, we find the country distributed into several tracts, more or less holy, according to their distance from the hallowed spot in the north lying on the bank of the river Sarasvatī. First, then, we have this small region itself, *Brahmāvarta*. This name may signify (i) either the region of Brahmā, the Creator, in which case it may have been regarded as, in some peculiar sense, the abode of the God, and possibly the scene of creation ; or, (ii) the region of devotion or the Vedas (Brahma), and then it will denote rather the country which was sanctified by the performance of holy rites, and the study of sacred literature.”¹

The word *Aryāvarta*, defined by Manu in verse 22 of Chapter II of the Manu Saṃhitā, has been explained by the commentator, Kullūka Bhatta, as “the land in which the Āryas or Aryans are born again and again.”² From this analogy, the word *Brahmāvarta* may be explained to mean the region where Brahmā, the Creator, appears again and again at the time of a fresh creation after the final disintegration of the world at the end of a cycle. Or, if the word, Brahma means the Vedas, it may indicate the region where the Vedas were

¹ Muir's *Original Sanskrit Texts*, Vol. II pp 400-401, Ed. 1871.

² आर्यो अनावर्तन्ते इल;इल ब्रह्मवर्तोऽनावर्तन्ते ।

first revealed or produced, and will be revealed and produced again and again at the end of *Kalpas*. Whatever may be the meaning of the word, it is significant as pointing to the belief of the ancient Aryans that they were autochthones in Sapta-Sindhu and were not colonists from another country, and this belief is corroborated by the Ṛgvedic evidence about the antiquity of the region, which has been discussed above.

There is some indication in the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* of the situation of the region named Ilā. There it has been stated that Manu at the time of the great Deluge sailed in his ship *northward* from the shores of the Southern Ocean, and his bark having been stranded on the "Northern Mountain," i.e., the Himālaya, he disembarked and landed on firm ground on the mountain. Here he met a beautiful damsel, named Ilā, who described herself as his daughter. It is very probable that this was the region, called Ilā, in the Ṛgveda, and if our surmise be correct, it was situated over the Himālaya and regarded as one of the best countries, known to the ancient Aryans.¹ The regions, watered by the Sarasvatī, the Dr̥śadvatī, and the Āpayā, were on the plains of Sapta-Sindhu, spread out at the foot of the Himālaya. As Manu's bark was stranded on a mountain-peak in the region of Ilā, which is pointed out in Kashmir, we can identify the former with the latter. And this supposition is strengthened by the extremely cold climate that prevailed in Ilā, as suggested by the fact that the year was called *Hima* in that region.² In Rv. x. 62, 9, the region where Manu lived has been described to be as elevated as the heavens, which also points to its situation on the Himālaya. This also goes to prove that the happy valley of Kashmir as well as the plains of Sapta-Sindhu were, in ancient times, peopled by the Aryans. It will be interesting to note here that "Adelung, the father of Comparative

¹ Rv. iii. 23. 4 :—नि ता द्ये वर आ इक्षिमा इक्ष्मास्यदे मुदिनन्ते अग्राम् ।

² Rv. ii. 1. 11 :—अमला अतदिमिषि ।

Philology, who died in 1806, placed the cradle of mankind in the valley of Kashmir, which he identified with Paradise."¹ Whether Kashmir was the cradle or Paradise of mankind or not, it can be confidently asserted that this beautiful mountainous country and the plains of Sapta-Sindhu were the cradle of the Aryan race.

3. The early institution of the Soma sacrifice, and its existence from time immemorial in the Indo-Aryan community also furnish an evidence of the vast antiquity of Sapta-Sindhu and of Aryan culture. The Soma cult is, as I have already said, as old as the cult of Indra-worship, for the Soma sacrifice was mainly performed for propitiating Indra, and strengthening him in his daily and annual fight with Vṛtra. It was an institution peculiar to the Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu, and distinguished them from all other branches of the Aryan race, who either on account of their disbelief in Indra, or from the difficulty in procuring the genuine Soma plant in any country other than Sapta-Sindhu or the Himālaya, did not take to the sacrifice, or discontinued it, when they left the country. The ancient Parsis or Iranians hated Indra and his worship on doctrinal grounds, because they did not like to give precedence to any deity over Fire and the Sun. Hence, there was a religious schism in ancient Sapta-Sindhu, which divided the Aryan community into two hostile parties, and was attended with such bitterness of feeling and mutual hatred and recrimination as to lead to a long and bloody warfare which terminated only with the ultimate expulsion of the Parsi branch from Sapta-Sindhu. Indra was regarded by them as the enemy of mankind, and the chief of the powers of evil, in fact as an *Asura* in the sinister sense used in later Vedic parlance, the equivalent Parsi word being *Daiva*. The Parsis, when they lived in Sapta-Sindhu, were addicted to the Soma drink, like their brethren, the Vedic Aryans, and made offerings of it to the Gods; but after their expulsion from

¹ Taylor's *Origin of the Aryans*, p. 9.

Sapta-Sindhu, they strongly condemned the *Haoma* (Soma) sacrifice, and purged it out of their rituals. Later on, however, they were compelled to revive it in some shape even in the country of their sojourn and adoption in deference to the clamour of a certain section who had a strong predilection for the drink. "The High Priests," according to Dr. Haug, "seem to have tried to conciliate the men of the old party, who were unwilling to leave the ancient polytheistic religion, (called *paoiryō* *īkəshō* 'of the old creed') and their time-hallowed rites and ceremonies. The old sacrifices were reformed and adapted to the more civilised mode of life of the Iranians. The intoxicating Soma beverage was replaced by a more wholesome and invigorating drink prepared from another plant, together with twigs of the pomegranate tree, and without any process of fermentation (water being merely poured over them); but the name in the Iranian form, *Haoma*, remained, and some of the ceremonies also."¹ Dr. Windischmann has observed: "The worship of *Haoma* is placed anterior to Yima, that is, to the commencement of Iranian civilisation, and in fact is declared to be the cause of that happy period." The R̥gveda also refers to the high antiquity of the Soma worship when it says of Soma (i. 91, 1): "By thy guidance, O brilliant (Soma), our courageous fathers have obtained treasures among the Gods."² Mr. Whitney also says: "The high antiquity of the cultus is attested by the references to it found occurring in the Persian *Avesta*;"³ and Madame Ragozin says: "And like the Fire-worship, the Soma cult takes us back to the so-called Indo-Aryan period, the time before the separation of the two great sister races, for we have seen Soma, under the name of *Haoma*, play exactly the same part in the worship and sacrifices of the Iranian followers

¹ Dr. Haug's *Essays on the Sacred Language, Writings and Religion of the Persis* p. 259 (Popular Edition).

² *Dissertation on the Soma Worship of the Arians.*

³ *The Journal of the American Oriental Society*, III, p. 300.

of the Avesta. Indeed, we probably trace here one of the very few relics of even an earlier time—that of the undivided Aryan, as it is sometimes called, 'the Proto-Aryan' period. For, the Avesta bears evident traces of the use of the Haoma at the sacrifices, being a concession made by Zarathustra to old established custom, not without subjecting it to a reforming and purifying process."¹ Lastly, Mr. B. G. Tilak says: "That the Soma sacrifice is an ancient institution is amply proved by parallel rites in the Parsi scriptures; and whatever doubt we may have regarding Soma in the Indo-European period, as the word is not found in the European languages, the system of sacrifices can be clearly traced back to the primeval age. Of this sacrificial system, the Soma sacrifice may, at any rate, be safely taken as the oldest representative, since it forms the main feature of the ritual of the Ṛgveda, and a whole Maṇḍala of 114 hymns in the Ṛgveda is dedicated to the praise of Soma."²

Thus, it would appear that the cult of the Soma sacrifice was the oldest in Sapta-Sindhu. A drink was prepared from the fermented juice of the Soma plant, mixed with honey and milk, which had a cheering and invigorating, if not quite intoxicating effect on the drinkers, and was offered as oblation to Indra, and drunk by his worshippers. But this plant—the genuine Soma plant, and not its spurious substitute among the ancient Parsis, was nowhere obtainable except a peak of the Himālaya, the plains of Sapta-Sindhu, the banks of the Indus, its tributaries, and the Sarasvatī (Rv. ix. 61, 7; 65, 23), and the shores of Lake Saryāvat in Kurukṣetra (Rv. ix. 65, 22; 113, 1). The plant, brought from the Himālaya, however, was the best of its kind and was very much sought for by the sacrificers (Rv. ix. 82, 3). It used to grow on the Mujavat mountain which was a peak of the

¹ Ragozin's *Vedic India*, pp. 168-70.

² Tilak's *Arctic Home in the Vedas*, pp. 205-06.

Himālaya, and from the place of its growth, it received the appellation of *Manjavata* (Rv. x. 34, 1).¹

The Soma has been described in the Ṛgveda as "the oldest" (*pratnamit*, ix. 42, 4) "anterior to all sacrifices" (*Yajnasya pūrvyah*, ix. 2, 10) "the very essence and spirit of sacrifice" (*Yajnasya dīmā*, ix. 2, 10; 6, 8), "the favourite drink of the Gods from the ancient times" (*divah pīyūṣam pūrvyam*, ix. 110, 8) "the father of Indra and other Gods" (Rv. ix. 96, 5) and "the father of all the Gods" (*Pitā devatānām*, ix. 86, 10). All these descriptions of the Soma point to its hoary antiquity, as also the antiquity of the land that produced it, and of the people that first used it in sacrifice.

That it was used in sacrifice by the ancestors of the Ṛgvedic *Ṛsis* is proved by various *mantras*, two of which are quoted below: "Our ancient ancestors, the Vasiṣṭhas, who were fond of drinking the Soma juice, performed the Soma sacrifice according to established rites" (Rv. x. 15, 8).

"Our ancestors, the Angirases, the Atharvans, and the Bṛghus have just come (to this sacrifice), and they are entitled to share the Soma drink with us" (Rv. x. 14, 6).

It should be borne in mind that these early ancestors had initiated the institution of sacrifice by producing Fire (Rv. i. 31, 1; 71, 3; x. 21, 5; 92, 10). As they were the earliest sacrificers, and probably also initiated the Soma sacrifice, their spirits were invoked at the time of holding a sacrifice, and they were asked to share the Soma drink with their descendants.

I will conclude this subject of the Soma sacrifice by quoting the following words from Ragozin's *Vedic India*:

¹ Cf. the *Mahābhārata* (xiv. 8. 1):

जिरे हिंसवतः इडे मुञ्चवाप् क्षाम पयंतः ।

तयते यच्च ययवांश्चरो विजयवापतिः ॥

Also *Nirukta* :—जीजवतीञ्जवति जातोञ्जवावर्षतो मुञ्चवाप् मुञ्चः ।

"The Soma, used in India, certainly grew on mountains, probably in the Himālayan highlands of Kashmir. It is certain that Aryan tribes dwelt in this land of tall summits and deep valleys in very early times—*probably earlier than that when the R̥g-hymns were ordered and collected, or the already complicated official ritual which they mostly embody was rigidly instituted.* From numerous indications scattered through the hymns, it appears probable that this was the earliest seat of the Soma worship, known to the Aryan Hindus, whence it may have spread geographically with the race itself, and that as the plant did not *grow in the lower and hotter regions*, the aridity of some parts disagreeing with it as much as the steam-laden sultriness of others, they continued to get 'from the mountains' the immense quantities needed for the consumption of the gradually widening and increasing Aryan settlements. A regular trade was carried on with Soma plant, and the traders belonged to mountain-tribes who were not Aryan, and, therefore irreverently handled their sacred ware like any other merchandise, bargaining and haggling over it. This is evidently the reason why Soma traders were considered a contemptible class; so much so that, when customs hardened into laws, they were included in the list, comprising criminals of all sorts, breakers of caste and other social laws, followers of low professions, as usurers, actors, etc.—of those who are forbidden to pollute sacrifices by their presence. To an Aryan Hindu, the man who owned the Soma and did not press it was a hopeless reprobate. In fact, he divided mankind into 'pressers' and 'not pressers,' the latter word being synonymous with 'enemy' and 'godless barbarians.' They were probably itinerant traders, and the bargain was concluded according to a strictly prescribed ceremonial, the details of which seem singularly absurd and grotesque, until one learns that they had a symbolical meaning. The price (probably for a given quantity, though that is not mentioned) is a cow light-colored or, more precisely, reddish-brown, with light-brown eyes, in allusion to the ruddy

or 'golden' color of the plant—which must not be tied, nor pulled by the ear—*i.e.*, not handled roughly.”¹

With regard to the traders of the Soma plant, whom Ragozin calls non-Aryans, it should be stated here that the R̥gveda mentions of the Soma plant having been brought by the falcon (Syena). The falcon was also called *Garuḍa* or *Suparṇa*, the golden-winged king-bird of prey. But there is also mention of a *R̥ṣi* or sage of the name of Syena whose son was Suparṇa. We shall see later on that there were nomadic and non-sacrificing Aryan tribes in Sapta-Sindhu, who were described by the derisive terms of *birds* and *sarpas*, *i.e.*, serpents, on account of their constant habit of moving from place to place and living in a semi-barbarous condition. The traders of the Soma plant belonged to this class and were hated by the sacrifice-loving Aryans for their ungodly and un-Aryan ways. It is, therefore, wrong to call them non-Aryans, as Ragozin has done. Sapta-Sindhu was not accessible to any non-Aryan tribes in those ancient times, and was inhabited by the purely Aryan race, among whom there were classes, both cultured and uncultured, and the traders of the Soma plant belonged to the latter class. And this is probably the reason why Syena and Suparṇa have been described as *R̥ṣis*, or the Sage-leaders of these nomadic and uncultured Aryan tribes.

To sum up the internal evidences of the R̥gveda, dealt with in this and the previous chapter: We have seen (1) that there were four seas round about Sapta-Sindhu, a fact which is confirmed by the geological evidence about the existence of those seas in ancient times; (2) that the region between the Sarasvatī and the Indus was regarded as the God-created birth-place of all life; (3) that the total absence of the mention of the Deluge in the R̥gveda proves the period of the composition of the hymns to be anterior to that event; (4) that this event took place sometime before the

¹ *Vedic India*, pp. 170-171.

composition of the Atharva-Veda, in which it has been referred to; (5) that the frequent references in the Ṛgveda to seismic disturbances of great intensity, and the depression of high grounds, and the elevation of mountains, point to the hoary antiquity of the Ṛgveda, which takes us back to later Pleistocene times when such occurrences were common; (6) that if some of the later hymns of the Ṛgveda be proved to have been composed about 5000 B C, the beginnings of Aryan life must be traced back to several thousand years more; (7) that Indra was one of the oldest Gods of the Aryans, to whom was ascribed the volcanic action resulting in the tossing up of mountains, the depression of high grounds and the carving out of paths for the Indus and the other rivers, which carries us back almost to the beginning of human life on this globe; (8) that it was in Sapta-Sindhu that the first great exploit of Indra, *vis.*, the killing of Vṛtra was performed, and the region where this act was first witnessed was that watered by the Sarasvatī, which earned both for her and Indra the appellation of "the Killer of Vṛtra"; (9) that the region of Ilā which was as old as that of the Sarasvatī was situated high up in the Himālaya, probably in Kashmir, and was the country where Dakṣa Prajāpati, one of the Creators, and Manu, the leader of the Aryan race, lived; and (10) that the Soma sacrifice was admittedly the oldest sacrifice among the Aryans, and the genuine Soma plant grew nowhere else excepting the Himālaya and Sapta-Sindhu. All these evidences unmistakably point to the vast antiquity of the Ṛgveda and of Sapta-Sindhu, and go to prove that the Aryans were autochthonous, and did not settle there as colonists from any country. This conclusion is confirmed by the following observations made by Muir, the eminent Sanskrit Scholar: "I must, however, begin with a candid admission that, so far as I know, none of the Sanskrit books, not even the most ancient, contain any distinct reference or allusion to the foreign origin of the Indians."¹

¹ Muir's *Original Sanskrit Texts*, Vol. II, p. 322 (1871).

CHAPTER V.

DESCRIPTION OF THE LAND AND THE RIVERS OF SAPTA-SINDHU, AND ITS FAUNA, FLORA AND MINERALS.

Having established the vast antiquity of Sapta-Sindhu and of the Aryans in that land, we will now turn to a description of the outlines of the land, and of its rivers, and an account of its Fauna, Flora and Minerals, as found in the *R̥gveda*. We have already said that Sapta-Sindhu had four seas on its four boundaries, excepting on the north-west where it had direct connection with Persia, and through it, with Western Asia. On the north were the Himalayan range, and the Asiatic Mediterranean Sea beyond, extending northward from the borders of Turkestan, and westward as far as the Black Sea. On the west were the Sulaiman Ranges and a strip of sea below them, which ran up the present province of Sind as an arm of the Arabian Sea. On the north-west was Gandhāra which is identified with modern Afghanistan, which also was peopled by Aryan colonists. On the east, was a sea, at places three miles deep, near the foot of the Himālaya, stretching from the east coast of Sapta-Sindhu down to Assam. On the south, was the Rājputānā Sea, stretching as far south as the Aravalli Range, and connected with the Arabian Sea on the west through the Gulfs of Cutch and Sind, and with the Eastern Sea occupying the Gangetic trough on the north-east, by probably a shallow strait, below modern Delhi. North-east Rājputānā is full of hills and rocks which form a continuation of the Aravalli range terminating at the Ridge near Delhi, but probably extending under the alluvium, as Oldham surmises, ¹ across the Gangetic trough till the range impinges on the Himālaya. This, then, probably marked the eastern coast-line of Sapta-Sindhu, below which was the Eastern Sea receiving the waters of

¹ *Memoirs on the Geological Survey of India*, Vol. XLII, P. 2, p. 97.

the Gangā and the Yamunā and the other rivers on the southern slopes of the Himālaya. From this it would appear that they were not large rivers in those days. "The termination of the (Aravalli) range to the northwards...is solely due to a gradual lowering of the general elevation, which has allowed the alluvium to invade the valleys to a greater and greater extent, leaving the higher peaks standing out as rocky inliers in the alluvium, till the range finally disappears in the last exposure of rock at Delhi." ¹ At the time when the Ṛgveda was composed, the sands on the northern coast of the Rājputānā Sea used probably to be drifted up inland by the strong wind that blew continually from the south and south-west. These sands covered up a large portion of the southern coast of Sapta-Sindhu, converting much of it into arid desert, and probably helping to gradually choke up the mouth of the Sarasvatī which, on account of the force of its current in those days, as we shall presently see, did its best to sweep them back again into the sea. It was like a perpetual struggle between the waters of the Sarasvatī and the sands on the sea-beach; but with the ultimate disappearance of the Eastern and the Rājputānā Seas, and the upheaval or gradual filling up of their beds with sand and alluvium, the rainfall became markedly scanty in Sapta-Sindhu, and the Sarasvatī gradually lost its strength till it was reduced to the insignificant river that it is at present, and its mouth completely choked up by the ever-increasing sand-drifts blown from the desert. This event, however, took place long after the age of the Ṛgveda. During Ṛgvedic times, the Sarasvatī was a large and magnificent stream which, in spite of the sand-drifts, meandered through the desert till it reached the Rājputānā Sea. Even then, there was a large strip of desert in the southern portion of Sapta-Sindhu, of which frequent mention is made in the Ṛgveda. (Rv. iii. 45, 1; ix. 79, 3; x. 63, 15).

Long after the Rājputānā Sea had become firm land, it "was too arid for general habitation" as the rain-fall was

¹ *Ibid.*, pp. 96-97.

very scanty; and this is proved by the anthropological fact of "the great rarity of weapons of the stone age in Rājputānā as compared with other parts of India."¹ It can be safely inferred that Rājputānā was a sea long after the stone age had commenced in Southern India, and that the R̥gveda was composed during that age.

We have already mentioned three of the principal sub-divisions of Sapta-Sindhu, *vis.*, (1) Sarasvatī, the region watered probably by the upper course of the river; (2) Bhārati, the region watered by its lower course and inhabited by the Bharatas, under the spiritual guidance of Viṣvāmitra and (3) Ilā, situated in the Himalayan valley of Kashmir. Besides these three important sub-divisions, there were two more, one inhabited by the Tṛtsus, somewhere to the east of Paruṣṇī, under the spiritual leadership of the Vasiṣṭhas, and the other on the banks of the Sindhu or the Indus. In addition to these principal sub-divisions inhabited by the five principal clans of the Aryans, among whom, besides the Bharatas and the Tṛtsus, were included the Anus, the Druhyus, and the Turbaśes or the Yadus, who were called by the name of *Pañcajanāh* (or Five Tribes), there were many other parts of Sapta-Sindhu, probably the different fertile regions known in modern times as the Doabs,² which were occupied by other Aryan tribes, none the less important than the *Pañcajanāh*, like the Purus and the Cedis. Watered by a number of rivers, the alluvial plains of Sapta-Sindhu were naturally very fertile, and produced a variety of bumper crops like barley, millets and rice which formed the staple food of the ancient Aryans. These fertile plains also afforded rich pastures to the cattle which the ancient Aryans valued as wealth and possessed in large numbers.

The Indus or the Sindhu has its source in the region to the west of mount Kailāsa on the northern slopes of the Hima-

¹ *Memoirs of the Geological Survey of India*, Vol. XLV, P. 1, p. 103.

² *Doab* literally means the region between two rivers (*De*=two and *ab* or *āp*=water).

laya. It "first follows in a westernly direction the great rock-gorge which runs with a depth of ten thousand feet between the parallel mountain chains of the Karakoram (Muz-Tagh) and the Himālaya. After breaking through the Hindu-kush mountains in a narrow bed, it flows in a southernly direction from the point where, not far from the city of Attock, at the west of the flowery vale of Kashmir, its waters are increased by the Kabul river." ¹ The western tributaries of the Sindhu are thus mentioned in the R̥gveda :—

"First thou goest united with the Tṛṣṭamā on this journey, with the Susartu, the Rasā, and the Śvetī, O Sindhu, with the Kubhā (Kopphen, Kabul river) to the Goma ti (Gomal), with the Mehtnu to the Krumu (Kṛum)—with whom thou proceedest together."² The rivers to the east of the Sindhu, some uniting together, as tributary to it, and others flowing as independent rivers into the adjacent seas, have been thus mentioned in the R̥gveda (x. 75, 5) : In the remote eastern border were the Gangā and the Yamunā which, running their short courses in the plain, flowed into the Eastern Sea covering the Gangetic trough. To the west of the Yamunā were the Dṛṣadvatī and the Sarasvatī which, having been united together, flowed into the Rajputana Sea. Then came the Śatadru and the Vipās which were united as one river and flowed into the sea which was undoubtedly the Rājputāna Sea (R̥v. iii. 33, 2). Next was the Paruṣṇī, which is identified with the modern Ravi or Irāvati, and flows into the Marudvṛdhā which was the name of the lower united course of the Asikni (modern Chenab or Chandrabhāgā) and the Vitastā (modern Jhelum) and flows into the Indus as its tributary. Besides the names of these rivers, there is also mention of the Ārjikyā, which is said to have been united with the Suṣomā. According to Yaska, the Ārjikyā is the Vipās and the Suṣoma is the Indus. Signs of an abandoned old river-bed between the Śatadru and the Paruṣṇī are still

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. II.

² R̥g. x. 75, 6 (Maxmüller's Translation).

visible, which seems to have been a continuation of the Vipāś, and joined the Indus probably lower down the point where the Marudvṛdhā now joins it. If the Ārjikiyā be the old name of the Vipāś, then Yaska's identification of the Suṣomā with the Indus may be correct. The Śatadru is now of course a tributary to the Marudvṛdhā which flows into the Indus. Probably the upheaval of the bed of the Rājputanā Sea offered an obstruction to its bed, and caused it to deflect its course towards the west till it joined the Marudvṛdhā. We thus find the names of the Seven Rivers that gave the country its ancient name of Sapta Sindhavh, which were undoubtedly the Sarasvatī, the Śatadru, the Ārjikiyā or Vipāś, the Paruṣṇī, the Asiknī, the Vitastā, and the Sindhu.

Two of these rivers, namely the Sarasvatī and the Ārjikiyā (the old Vipāś) were subsequently dried up, and became insignificant, when Sapta Sindhu came to be called as the *Punjab* or the Land of Five Rivers.

The present name of the Dṛṣadvatī is Ghaggar. But the Sarasvatī and the Dṛṣadvatī, as we have already said, are not now great rivers. The Sarasvatī is represented by a channel or channels, occupying the position of the ancient much-praised stream, but now nearly dry for a great part of the year. The present condition of the Dṛṣadvatī or the Ghaggar is similar to that of the Sarasvatī. They, as well as the Mārkaṇḍa and the Chitung, rise from the lower hills of Sirmur, and are violent torrents during the rains, though nearly dry at other times.

The river Āpayā has been mentioned with the Sarasvatī and the Dṛṣadvatī in the Ṛgveda (iii. 23, 4). Probably the Āpayā can be identified with either the Mārkaṇḍa or the Chitung.

The Gangā and the Yamunā have been mentioned in the Ṛgveda (x. 75, 5) with the Sindhu and its tributaries, and the Sarasvatī. But as we have seen, they are not included in the computation of the seven rivers that gave the country its name.

The Gangā became the most sacred river in India in post-Vedic times after the Sarasvatī had lost its importance, but neither it nor the Yamunā has been given any prominence in the R̥gveda, in which both occupy subordinate places. No separate hymn has been composed in their praise, as has been done in the case of the Sindhu and the Sarasvatī. They have been invoked along with the other rivers to share a general praise of the rivers of Sapta-Sindhu. This shows that the Gangā and the Yamunā were not regarded as important streams in R̥gvedic times, probably because their courses were short, and their banks were not so eagerly sought for habitation by the ancient Aryans on account of their proximity to the Eastern Sea. The banks of the Yamunā, however, afforded excellent pastures to the cattle, as these latter are praised for their milk. (Rv. v. 52, 17.)

Besides these rivers, mention of the following rivers is found in the R̥gveda, *viz.*, the Svetayāvarī river (viii. 26, 18), the Śikṣā (i. 104, 3), the Anjasi, the Kulīśī and the Virapatnī (i. 104, 3), the Sarayu (Rv. x. 64, 9) which was not the well-known river of Kosala of post-Vedic times, and the Adīnā (Rv. vii. 18, 8). It is very difficult to identify most of these rivers with any present rivers; but it is surmised that the Svetayāvarī might be the Svettī or the Swat river, a tributary of the Indus; and the others might be identified with some of the streams, now insignificant, that flow through the Punjab, or they may be the names of some of the rivers of Bactria.

The Sindhu has been praised in the R̥gveda in the following verses (x. 75) :—

“The Sindhu is the best of all rivers.

“O Sindhu, when thou first didst rush towards the region that supplies food, Varuṇa cut various paths for thee. Thou flowest through elevated regions and holdest the highest place over all running streams.

"The roar of the Sindhu rises up from the earth, and fills the heaven. She is flowing with great speed, and her appearance is refulgent.

"The sound of her waters gives one the impression of rain falling in thundering torrents. Here comes the Sindhu like a bellowing bull.

"O Sindhu, as milch-cows run to their calves with udders full of milk, so the other rivers are coming to thee with lowing sounds, carrying waters from all sides. As a king starts on a military expedition, followed by his army, so thou art advancing, accompanied by two different sets of streams. Thou art wending thy way with these rivers, riding in the same chariot.

"The unconquerable Sindhu is running straight. Her colour is white and bright, and she is great. Her waters are flowing with great velocity, and flooding all the four directions. Of all moving objects, none possesses such great speed as she. She is an object of admiration like a mare, and her shape is symmetrical like that of a robust woman.

"The Sindhu has perpetual youth and is beautiful. She has horses of the very best breed, excellent chariots and excellent cloths. She has been nicely decorated and has vast stores of food, and very large quantities of wool. Her banks are covered with *silama* grass, and sweet-smelling flowers, full of honey."

The above beautiful and graphic description of the Sindhu in a hymn, composed thousands of years ago, is as faithful to-day as it was in that remote age. For, she is still the grand and majestic river that she was in ancient times, when the vastness of her expanse, the velocity of her currents, the fertile valley through which she flowed, and the wealth and plenty that she brought to the ancient Aryans by the rich agricultural and industrial products on her banks made such a deep impression on the mind of the Vedic bard. The province of Sindhu or Sind even now produces excellent breeds of horses,

The cloths manufactured there were known by the name of *Sindhu*, and were of such fine texture as to have created a demand for them not only in Sapta-Sindhu but also in far-off countries like Babylonia and Assyria even in much later times.¹ The woollen fabrics of the Punjab and Kashmir, which even now elicit the admiration and praise of the civilised world, were famous also in Ṛgvedic times. The fertile valley of the Indus produced such abundant crops as to justify the Vedic bard in calling it a granary of the river. The above description of the Sindhu undoubtedly gives us a vivid picture of agricultural and industrial activities and prosperity of the ancient Aryans in those very early times. In fact, it seems to me as if the Sindhu represented and was the emblem of Action which made the Aryans a great and powerful people, when the rest of the world was "wrapped up in winter sleep," just as much as the Sarasvatī represented and was the emblem of the mental, moral and spiritual culture that made them a highly civilised nation. The banks of the Sarasvatī were the scene of Contemplation, where sacrifices were performed and the bards indulged even then in the highest speculations regarding the Soul (*Ātmā*) and the Universal Spirit (*Parmātmā*) that permeates and underlies all things, and tried to solve the riddle of life. The Spiritual Contemplation of the people was combined with Action which was directed towards the improvement of *material* prosperity, not divorced from spiritual culture, but wedded to and dominated by it. It was this happy combination of Spirit and Matter that helped to make the ancient Aryans a great and glorious people.

Let us now turn to the beautiful verses composed in praise of the Sarasvatī :—

"May Sarasvatī, the purifier, the giver of food, the bestower of wealth in the shape of sacrificial fruits, seek viands in our sacrificial rite.

¹ "The old Babylonian name for muslin was *Sindhu*, i. e., the stuff was simply called by the name of the country which exported it." Ragoein's *Vedic India*, p. 306.

"Sarasvatī, the inspirer of truthful word, the instructress of the right-minded, has accepted our sacrifice.

"Sarasvatī makes manifest by her deeds a huge river, and generates all knowledge." (Rv. i. 3, 10-12.)

These verses are an unimpeachable testimony of the grateful acknowledgment by the ancient Aryans of the facility that the Sarasvatī afforded them to perform their sacrifices, and compose the *mantras* of the Ṛgveda, that embodied, as it were, the truth that was revealed to the ancient seers.

Read again the translation of the following verses :—

"Sarasvatī, appearing in the form of this river, has been breaking, with her strong and swift waves, the high elevation of the hills, like those who dig up for roots. Let us offer our service to her who breaks both her banks, and propitiate her by means of hymns and sacrifices for our own protection.

"O Sarasvatī, thou hast destroyed the detractors of the Gods, and killed the wily and all-pervading son of Vṛṣṇa. O Goddess Sarasvatī, rich in food-stores, thou hast given lands to men, and caused rains to fall for their benefit.

"O thou food-supplying Goddess Sarasvatī, dost thou protect us from harm at the time of war, and grant us, like Pūṣan, enjoyable wealth.

"The dreaded Sarasvatī, who is seated on a golden chariot and destroys our enemies, covets our beautiful hymns.

"Her velocity is immeasurable, which overcomes all obstructions, and makes a thundering sound while bringing waters.

"As the daily sojourning sun brings the days, so may Sarasvatī, defeating our enemies, bring to us her other watery sisters.

"May our most beloved Sarasvatī, who has seven riparian sisters, and was adored with hymns by the ancient Ṛṣis, always deserve our praise.

" May Sarasvatī who has filled the earth and heaven with her brightness, protect us from the attack of unbelievers and detractors.

" May Sarasvatī be invoked by men in every battle—the seven-bodied Sarasvatī who extends over the three worlds and is the benefactress of the five tribes.

" May Sarasvatī deserve the praise of the learned hymn-makers—Sarasvatī who is the most famous among her seven sisters by her greatness and valiant deeds, who has got the greatest velocity of all rivers, and is adorned with many excellent qualities on account of her superiority.

" O Sarasvatī, dost thou lead us on to immense wealth and not make us low. Dost thou not trouble us with excess of water, but accept our friendship and be welcome to our homes. May we not be compelled to go to any inferior place far away from thy banks." (Rv. vi. 61.)

" May Sarasvatī, Sarayū and Sindhū, the rivers that flow with huge waves, come here to protect us. They are like our mothers, supplying us with water. May they supply us with water, tasteful like clarified butter, and sweet as honey " (Rv. x. 64, 9).

" Sarasvatī is flowing with life-sustaining water and protects us like an iron citadel. She is extended like a (broad) thoroughfare, and proceeds in her glory, outstripping the other flowing streams.

" The holiest of rivers, flowing from the mountains into the Sea, Sarasvatī alone knows (the merits of sacrifice). It was she who gave Nahuṣa vast wealth and produced milk and butter for him

" May the fortunate Sarasvatī be pleased to listen to our hymns at this sacrifice. May the adorable Gods approach her with bent knees, who is rich in everlasting wealth and kind to her friends.

"O Sarasvati, we shall get wealth bestowed on us by thee, by offering thee these oblations, and humbling ourselves before thee. We shall come in contact with thee, by living in this thy favourite dwelling-place, and obtaining support from thee like a tree.

"O fortunate Sarasvati, Vasiṣṭha is opening for thee the door to the hall of sacrifice. Prosper, thou white Goddess..." (Rv. vii, 95).

From the above description of the river Sarasvati, it clearly appears that she was a dreaded and mighty stream in R̥g-vedic times, flowing from the Himālaya right into the sea with great velocity, and with spill-waters flooding the country around. She supplied the ancient Aryans with pure drinking water and made her banks fertile, and rich in crops. The Aryan agricultural population was greatly indebted to her, and, as we have already seen, clung to her as a child clings to its mother's breast, with a love and fondness that is quite touching. It was on the banks of the Sarasvatī that great sacrifices used to be performed and the Aryans composed most of their hymns. In those days, as we have already said, she was certainly not an insignificant river which she is now, but a noble stream, with a current running throughout the year, which was probably fed by the melting snow of the glaciers near her source. As has already been observed in a previous chapter, there is evidence of a cold climate having prevailed in ancient Sapta-Sindhu, and geologists think it quite probable that the Himālaya was covered with snow even in the lower altitudes. The disappearance of snow from these lower heights and the scantiness of rainfall even during the rainy season in modern times, due to the disappearance of the surrounding seas, have reduced the Sarasvatī to her present skeleton which is not even the shadow of her former greatness. The Sarasvatī was also famous for the number of sacrifices performed, and the rich knowledge in spiritual matter that the ancient Aryans acquired on her banks. That the region through which the Sarasvatī flows was inhabited by Aryan tribes from very ancient times

would also appear from the fact acknowledged by the Vedic bards that she was praised by their ancestors in olden times.

The lower plains of Sapta-Sindhu, watered by her rivers, were fertile, which, but for the rivers, the Salt Range, long stretches of woods and the strip of desert in the south, would have made the landscape somewhat dreary and monotonous. There is no beautiful hill scenery in the plains; but on the west, the north-west and the north, mountain-ranges lift up their heads to the skies and make the landscape look grand, beautiful and variegated. The snowy ranges of the Himālaya have been referred to in the R̥gveda (x. 121, 4), though none of its highest peaks mentioned, for the simple reason that there were no means of advancing eastward on account of the existence of the Eastern Sea, and exploration of the gigantic mountain range was more difficult in those days by reason of a low temperature having prevailed in Sapta-Sindhu, and the lower elevations having been covered with snow. The peak of the Mujavat where the Soma plant grew was familiar to the ancient Aryans, as well as the valley of Kashmir and the surrounding ranges of the Himālaya. The mountains of Sapta-Sindhu have been described in one beautiful verse which being translated into English, stands as follows:—"The mountains stand immovable for æons after æons, as if their desires have been satiated and fulfilled, and hence they do not leave their places on any account. They are free from the decrepitude of old age, and are covered with green trees, looking green, and filling heaven and earth with the sweet melodies of birds." (Rv. x. 94, 12). In two other verses the immovable mountains have been invoked to be propitiatory. (Rv. vii. 35, 3 and 8). In Rv. i. 56, 2, it has been stated that ladies used to climb up the hills to pluck flowers. It would thus appear that the mountainous regions of Sapta-Sindhu were as much inhabited as the plains by the ancient Aryans. Arachosia and Afghanistan on the west were also inhabited by Aryan tribes, who were ruled by Aryan kings performing Vedic sacrifices.

Having given a short description of the physical features of Sapta-Sindhu, as revealed in the *R̥gveda*, we will now proceed to give a short description of its fauna and flora.

Among domestic animals, we find the largest mention of cattle (cows) made in the *R̥gveda*. The cow was, as she is even now, a most useful animal. She supplied the Aryans with milk and butter, and her dried dung was used for fuel. Butter clarified was used not only in food, but also in the libations offered to Agni or Fire at the time of sacrifice. As religious sacrifice formed an essential part of Aryan life in Sapta-Sindhu, and clarified butter prepared from cow's milk only was used in sacrifice, the value of the cow from a religious standpoint can easily be imagined. It was the belief of the ancient Aryans, as it is still the belief of their descendants, that libations, offered to Agni, were shared by all the Gods, and as such, Agni was the *Purohita* or priest of the Sacrifice. The libations of *ghṛta* (clarified butter) kindle the flames of the sacrificial Fire, and help it to consume the other offerings made to it. The cow, therefore, was not only a highly useful but also a sacred animal, and two whole Suktas have been devoted to the praise of the *Gāvi-devatā* or the Cow-goddess. (*Rv.* x. 19 and 169.) The bull was the emblem of power and generation, and was used for drawing the plough and the car or cart. But there is evidence of its having been killed in sacrifices and its cooked flesh offered to the Gods, especially to Indra who seemed to have developed a keen taste and inordinate desire for it. (*Rv.* x. 86, 13 and 14.)

There is also evidence of beef having been eaten by the ancient Aryans.¹ But milch-cows were seldom sacrificed, though there is evidence in the *R̥gveda* and the *Brāhmaṇas*² of the practice of sacrificing barren cows (*Vehat*), or cows that miscarried or produced still-born calves. In later times, however, the sacrifice of bulls or barren cows was entirely

¹ *Rv.* vi. 39, 1.—Read also ii. 7, 5; vi. 16, 49; 39, 1; ix. 169, 3. x. 27, 2; 28, 3; 86, 1. 3 & 14.

² *Rv.* ii. 7, 5; *Alt Brāh.* i. 3, 4.

discontinued and prohibited, as beef was probably found unsuitable for consumption, and disagreeable to health, on account of the change of cold into warm climate. The horse-sacrifice also was afterwards discontinued, probably for the same reasons and also because it was more costly than the bull-sacrifice. The cow-hides were tanned and made into many articles of everyday use. There was no prejudice, as there is at the present day, against using receptacles made of cow-hides for storing water, wine, honey, oil, clarified butter, and even articles of worship like the Soma juice. (Rv. i. 28, 9 and ix. 66, 29). Cow-dung was also probably used as manure for fertilizing agricultural lands.

It may be argued that though bulls were sacrificed, and their flesh cooked and offered to the Gods, it was not partaken of by the sacrificers, or the Aryans. But in Rv. vi. 39, 1, the sage Bharadvāja distinctly prays to Indra to grant him and the worshippers food with "go" or cow as the principal item.¹ This, of course, may be interpreted to mean that by the word "go" or cow is implied not her flesh but her milk and milk-products like butter, curd, ghee, etc. This may be a possible explanation; but, as Professor Wilson says, "there does not seem to be anything in the Veda that militates against the literal interpretation." In the *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa* which was composed long after the R̥gveda, we come across a passage which says that when the king or any respected person comes as a guest, one should kill a bull or a *Vehat*, i.e., an old barren cow (i. 3, 4).² Yājñavalkya also

¹ Rv. vi. 39, 1 :—देवेषु भुवस्त्वयते गो यथाः ।

Sāyana comments on this as follows :—ययते ययता ययता गो यथाः ययोये वासां ताहता ययोयानि भुवस् संयोजय ।

² This practice probably continued till comparatively recent times. In the *Uttara Rāma-Caritam* of Bhavabhūti occurs the following passage :—

"Why, know you not,
The Vedas, which enshrine our holy laws,
Direct the householder shall offer those
Who in the law are skilled, the honied meal,
And with it flesh of ox, or calf, or goat,
And the like treatment shall the householder
Receive from Brāhmins learned in the Veda?"

(Hindu Theatre, I. 339.)

expresses a similar view.¹ In the *Mahābhārata*, it has been related that for the royal kitchen of King Rantideva, two thousand cows and other animals used to be slaughtered daily.² In the *R̥gveda* also, there is distinct mention of a place for slaughtering cows. (x. 89, 14.) From all these evidences it is clear that there was no prejudice of the ancient Aryans against beef-eating.³ Very probably it was discontinued, as we have already said, after the climate had become very hot, as it was found injurious to health; and then beef came to be religiously prohibited as an article of food.

The horse was the next most useful domestic animal. Professor Macdonell has said that the horse was never used by the ancient Aryans for riding but only for drawing cars or chariots.⁴ This again appears to me to be another misstatement of fact. For there are many verses in the *R̥gveda*

In the *Mahāvīracaritam* also occurs the following:—

"The heifer is ready for sacrifice, and the food is cooked in *ghes*. Thou art a learned man, come to the house of the learned, favour us (by joining in the entertainment.)

¹ मध्याह्नं महाजं वा गोमियादीपक्वमयेत् । (*Yājñ* I. 109.)

Mahābhārata (*Vana Parva*) Ch. 266, verses 10, 11:—

राक्षी महाजसे पूर्वं रक्षिदेवस्य वै द्विज ।

ए सद्यश्चै त्वं यज्यते पशूनामन्वहं तदा ॥

सद्यश्चै त्वं यज्यते वै सद्यश्चै नवां तथा ।

समांसं ददती क्षत्रं रक्षिदेवस्य विजयः ।

अनुवाचीर्निरनवहं पश्य विजयतन ॥

"O Brāhmaṇa, in the days of yore, two thousand animals used to be killed every day in the kitchen of King Rantideva. And in the same manner two thousand kine were killed every day. Rantideva daily distributed food mixed with meat. O foremost of Brāhmaṇas, that king thus acquired unrivalled fame." (M. N. Dutt's Translation.)

² For an elaborate account of beef-eating and cow-sacrifice in ancient India, read Dr. Mitra's *Indo-Aryans*, Vol. I, pp. 354-388.

⁴ Macdonell's *History of Sanskrit Literature*, p. 150.

showing that the horse was used as much for riding as for driving, of which I will quote only a few below :—

"O *Aśvins*, come quickly to the place where we are offering hymns, riding on your fleet horses." (viii. 5, 7.)¹

"O *Indra*, come thou to us from the distant region, riding on thy two handsome horses, and drink this *Soma*." (viii. 6, 36.)²

"Our captains (leaders) have assembled riding on their horses. O *Indra*, may our charioteers be victorious in the battle." (vi. 47, 31.)³

"Warriors, eager to fight, follow me on their beautiful horses, and assembling together invoke my aid in battle." (iv. 42, 5.)⁴

"Adorable *Āditya*, may I pass (safe) in your car from the illusions which (you desire) for the malignant, the snares which are spread for your foes, (in like manner) as a *horseman* (passes over a road)" (Rv. li. 27, 22).

The word *Aśvīva* (अश्वीव) has been used in this verse to mean "like a horseman."

The *Maruts* or winds have also been described in Rv. x. 92, 9, as advancing rapidly on horseback.

In Rv. x. 156, 1, mention has been made of *Āji* or the race-course, where fleet horses were run in a race. Unless the horses were ridden, it would have been impossible to hold horse-races. The stake marking the goal in the race-course was called *Kāṛṣma*. The chariot-race was, of course, distinct from the horse-race.

¹ Rv. viii. 5, 7:—वा नः अश्विभ्यो हवयुषं अश्विभ्यो राह्विः । वातनवे निरविष्य ॥

² Rv. viii. 6, 36:—वा नो वाहि परावतीहरिषां हवयवाभ्याम् । इमामिन्द्र सुतं विव ॥

(Read also Rg. x. 96, 10 and *R̥gvedic Culture* Ch. v. 222-227.)

³ Rv. vi. 47, 31:—अजस्रपदांश्चरन्ति नो नरोऽजास्रमिन्द्र रविषी जवन्तु ।

⁴ Rv. iv. 42, 5:—आ नरः कथा वातवन्तो नो हवाः सगरश्च हवन्तु ।

Dadhikras is the deity of the war-horse, and also the name of Fire, to which the horse has been frequently compared. Three Suktas, *vis.*, Rv. iv. 38, 39 and 40 have been devoted to the praise of the war-horse or *Dadhikras* and from a perusal of these spirited hymns, it appears that the war-horse was used for riding as well as for drawing war-chariots.

The war-chariots could only be manœuvred on even plains and hard grounds ; but the cavalry could easily pursue the enemy over rough grounds and ups and downs, which it was impossible for war chariots to do.¹ It would, indeed, be strange if the Aryans did not discover the use of the horse as an animal for riding, when they used it as a beast of burden (Rv. viii. 46, 8). The horse was also used for drawing the plough. (Rv. x. 101, 7).

The horse, as we have already said, was the emblem of Fire, the Sun and Power, and used to be formerly sacrificed, and its cooked flesh partaken of by the worshippers with great relish (Rv. i. 162, 12). The horse, decked with pearl, gold and silver ornaments, took part in festive processions, as it does even now in modern India.

The ass has also been mentioned in the *R̥gveda*. It was employed to draw carts (Rv. i. 34, 4), and also to carry burdens. The wild ass (*Asinus Onager*) is still confined to the sandy deserts of Sind and Cutch, where from its speed and timidity it is almost unapproachable.² Probably these wild asses were tamed in ancient Sapta-Sindhu.

I have not come across any distinct mention of the mule in the *R̥gveda*. But it is mentioned in the *Aitareya*

¹ In this connection, the translation of the following verses from the 46th Sūkta of the Sixth Maṇḍala of the *R̥gveda* will be found interesting :—

"O Indra, when the great battle begins, thou urgest our horses over the uneven paths, like falcons darting upon their food and flying over inaccessible regions with great speed.

"Rushing rapidly like rivers in their downward course, and although neighing loudly through terror, they yet, tight-girthed, return repeatedly (to the conflict) for cattle, like birds darting on their prey."

² Ency. Brit. Vol. XII., p. 742, Ninth Edition,

Brāhmaṇa (vi. 17. 3).¹ It would thus appear that cross-breeding was known in India from very early times, and the utility of mules as beasts of burden understood by the ancient Aryans.

The buffalo was also a domestic animal in ancient Sapta-Sindhu. Probably its rich milk was used for food; and butter was made of it. It was also used as a draught-animal for drawing carts and ploughs. Herds of buffaloes were grazed in the woods, just as they are done even to this day. (Rv. ix. 33, 1.) They were also killed for their flesh, Indra having been very fond of it and devouring at a time the flesh of 100 to 300 buffaloes. (Rv. v. 29, 8; vi. 17, 11.)¹

The goat was also domesticated for food, milk and its soft wool, for which it is even now famous in Kashmir and Tibet. It was also sacrificed in honour of the Gods, and it replaced the bull and the horse in later times, most probably because it was discovered to be singularly free from tuberculosis. It is remarkable that in all affections from this disease, the *Āyurveda* which embodies the Hindu system of medicine, prescribes goat's milk and goat's flesh for patients as necessary diets. The goat was sometimes harnessed to light carts in ancient Sapta-Sindhu. (Rv. ix. 26, 8.)

The sheep was also largely domesticated for its flesh and wool, and sacrificed in honour of the Gods. (Rv. i. 91, 14.) The sheep of Gandhāra (Kandahar) was famous for its wool. (Rv. i. 126, 7 and iv. 37, 4.) The camel was a familiar beast of burden in ancient Sapta-Sindhu, as it is even now in the modern Punjab. It was even then, as it is now, "the

¹ In *Harīśamīa Parva* of the *Mahābhārata* (Chaps. 146-147) is the description of a picnic, held in Pindāraka, a watering place on the west coast of Guzerat, near Dvārakā, in which Kṛṣṇa, Baladeva, Arjuna and others took part. At the banquet roast buffalo meat, which seemed to have been a favourite dish, was served. In Chap. 205 of the *Vanaparva* of the *Mahābhārata* also, it is related that buffalo-meat was publicly sold in the market, and the stalls displaying it were crowded by customers.

ship of the desert " (Rv. viii. 46, 28), carrying burdens and travellers on its back across the sandy wilds of Sind and southern Sapta-Sindhu.

The dog was also a pet domestic animal. Its size must have been enormous in those days, as it was used as a beast of burden. (Rv. viii. 46, 28.) It is well known that in the polar regions the dog is used by the Esquimaux to draw sledges over the ice. Even in later times, Sapta-Sindhu was famous for its dogs, and large numbers used to be exported to Persia and Mesopotamia to assist in the hunt.¹

There are evidences of the elephant having been tamed after capture, in ancient Sapta-Sindhu. Both European and Indian scholars have said that the elephant has but rarely been mentioned in the *R̥gveda*. Professor Macdonell goes so far as to say that the animal " is explicitly referred to in only two passages of the *R̥gveda*, and the form of the name applied to it 'the beast (*mṛga*) with a hand (*hasti*)' shows that the *R̥gis* still regarded it as a strange animal."² It was indeed a strange animal, as it was not so familiar on the plains of Sapta-Sindhu as the horse, the cow, the buffalo or the camel. It is a ferocious animal in its wild state, living on mountains and in the deep recesses of forests. It is caught and tamed with great difficulty and hazard, and none but Rajas and rich noblemen can afford to keep it. There is no reason for wonder, therefore, that the *R̥gis* called it by its distinguishing limb, the proboscis, which the animal uses just as we use our hand for picking up food and things. But it was also known by the names of *Ibha* and *Vāraṇa*, and has

¹ "The Babylonians imported Indian dogs. The breed is asserted to be the largest and strongest that exist, and on that account, the best suited for hunting wild lions which they will readily attack. The great fondness felt by the Persians for the pleasure of the chase, by whom it was regarded as a chivalrous exercise, must have increased the value and use of these animals which soon became even an object of luxury." (Hist. Hist. of the World, Vol. I, p. 488)

² Macdonell's *Hist. of Sansh. Lit.*, p. 148.

been referred to not in two passages only of the R̥gveda as Professor Macdonell says, but in several passages in one name or another, some of which are mentioned below :

"O Maruts, ye eat the trees of the forest like the beasts called elephants." (Rv. i. 64, 7.)¹

"O Agni, thou goest with fearless power (majesty), just as the king goes with his minister on the elephant." (Rv. iv. 4, 1.)²

"(O Aśvins), as the hunters desire to trap large elephants, so I am invoking ye, day and night, with these articles of sacrifice." (Rv. x. 40, 4.)³

This verse shows that hunters used to trap or catch elephants in ancient Sapta-Sindhu, and they were constantly on the look-out for elephants, as the catching of these animals was highly paying and profitable to them.

"Indra assumes uncontrollable power in sacrifices, like an elephant that exudes the *mada* juice, i.e., becomes *must* or *rogue*." (viii. 33, 8.)⁴

"The powerful mother replied, 'he who seeks thy eumltly, fights like an elephant on the mountain.' " (Rv. viii. 45, 5.)⁵

"O Aśvins, like a rogue elephant, driven by *ankuśa* (iron hook), kill ye the enemies, bending your bodies." (Rv. x. 106, 6.)⁶

From the above quotations it would appear that elephants, that inhabited the mountains and forests of Sapta-Sindhu, were caught and tamed by hunters, and sold to the Rajas who used to ride them with their ministers. They were also

¹ Rv. i. 64, 7:—सखा इव हस्तिनः खादन्वा वना । etc.

² Rv. iv. 4, 1:—वाहिं राजिबालवर्गं हमेन ।

³ Rv. x. 40, 4:—युवां सुमेव वारणा सुमन्त्रो वो वीणा वसोर्ध्विवा नि ववान् ।

⁴ Rv. viii. 33, 8:—खाना खनो न वारणः पुद्वा चरव दधे । etc.

⁵ Rv. viii. 45, 5:—प्रति त्वा ब्रवन्ती मदद्विवावन्ती न वोविषत् । यस्ते ब्रवन्तु मावन्ते ॥

⁶ Rv. x. 106, 6:—अन्कुशेन जनेरो मुक्तां रीतू मैतोमेव मुक्तां री पर्वरिवा, etc.

probably used in war. That these animals were the natives of the Himālayan forests would appear from the following extracts from the *Encyclopædia Britannica* (Vol. XII, p. 742):—"The elephant still exists in considerable numbers along the *terai* or sub-montane fringe of the Himālaya." It is therefore extremely likely that the elephant existed in the Himālayan forests of Sapta-Sindhu in ancient times also.

Among other wild animals and beasts of prey, mention is made in the Ṛgveda of the spotted deer (i. 37, 1), the musk-deer (x. 146, 6), the black buck, known as *Kṛṣṇasāra Mṛga* (x. 94, 5), the wild boar, the bison (viii. 45, 24), the lion (viii. 1, 20; ix. 89, 3; x. 28, 10), the wolf (*Vṛka*), the bear, the hare, the mongoose (*Nakula*), the monkey (*Kapi*), and the jackal. There were long stretches of woods and thickets in the plains, and forests on the mountains, in which they lived and freely roamed. A whole beautiful Sūkta has been devoted to the description of *Araṇyāni* or forest. (Rv. x. 146).

The lion is still found in the deserts of Rājputānā, having probably been driven to the south by the destruction of the woods and forests of Sapta-Sindhu. The tiger (*Vyāghra*) has not been anywhere mentioned in the Ṛgveda, as it was probably in those days a native of Southern India; but now its natural home is the swampy jungles of Bengal, though he is also found in all the forests of India. The absence of the tiger in ancient Sapta-Sindhu unmistakably points to its complete severance from the Deccan. The lion used to be trapped and caught alive, and kept in cages probably for show. (Rv. x. 28, 10.)

With regard to the black buck, the antelope proper (*Antelope bezoartica*), it should be mentioned here that it was held sacred by the ancient Aryans, and its skin used at the time of holding sacrifices. The white hairs of the skin represented the *Rks*, the black represented the *Sāmas*, and the yellow the *Yajus*.¹ "Its special habitat is the salt plains,

¹ The Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa. I. 4. 2

as on the coast lines of Guzrat and Orissa, where herds of fifty does may be seen, accompanied by a single buck. The doe is of a light fawn colour, and has no horns. The colour of the buck is a deep brown-black above, sharply marked off from the white of the belly. His spiral horns, twisted for three or four turns like a corkscrew, often reach the length of 30 inches. The flesh is dry and unsavoury, but is permitted meat for Hindus, even of the Brahman caste."¹ It is to be noted that the Aryans even in a later age regarded the black buck as a distinguishing mark of the Aryan land proper, or more correctly speaking, of the land where Vedic sacrifices could be performed (*Yajniya deśa*). All other lands over which the black buck did not roam were unfit for holding sacrifices in, and regarded as *Mleccha deśa*.² Probably the proper habitat of the black buck in ancient times was the Southern and Eastern coast-lines of Sapta-Sindhu, which in later times extended, with the disappearance of the Eastern Sea from the Gangetic trough, to the coast-line of Orissa, and with the disappearance of the Rājputānā Sea, to the coast-line of Guzrat. This extended country afterwards formed Āryāvarta,³ or the country inhabited by the Aryans. It is remarkable that the black buck is found nowhere else in India excepting Āryāvarta.

The proper home of the musk-deer is in the Himālaya where it is still found, and killed by hunters for its musk.

The *Gaura Mya* which has been frequently mentioned in the R̥gveda (viii. 9, 3; 45, 24) is probably the *Gour* (*Bibos Gaurus*), the "bison" of sportsmen, "which is found in all the hill jungles, in the Western Ghat, in Central India, in Assam, and in British Burma," and "sometimes

¹ *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. XII. p. 742 (Ninth Edition).

² लक्ष्मणस्य चरति नदी न च लक्ष्मणतः । बभौवद्विषो द्विषो च बभौवद्विषतः परः ॥
(Manu, II, 23.)

³ वाचमस्यैव वं पूर्वादाद्युद्धानु पश्चिमात् । तदीयवाचरं विनोतावाचरं विदुर्वाः ॥
(Manu, II, 24.)

attains the height of 20 hands (close on 7 feet), measuring from the hump above the shoulder. Its short curved horns and skull are enormously massive. Its colour is dark chestnut or coffee-brown. From the difficult nature of its habitat and from the ferocity with which it charges an enemy, the pursuit of the bison is no less dangerous and no less exciting than that of the tiger or the elephant."¹ As it is now found in, and confined to the Southern Peninsula, Assam and Burma; it must have migrated to these countries from Sapta-Sindhu, after it had become connected with the Deccan and Assam by the disappearance of the Rājputānā Sea and the Eastern Sea respectively. There is geological evidence to prove that the Deccan was connected with Assam and Burma on the one hand, and South Africa on the other, and extended as far south as Australia, forming a large continent by itself, and completely cut off from Sapta-Sindhu by seas. The *Gaura Myga*, having once migrated to the south, freely roamed east and west through the jungles and over the hills of Central India, the Western Ghats, Assam and British Burma, and completely disappeared from Sapta-Sindhu which, with the destruction of the woods, could no longer afford it free pasturage and absolute security.

Among reptiles, frogs and snakes are mentioned in the *Rg-veda* (vii. 50, 103). The blatant croakings of the frogs have been compared with the loud recitations of the Vedic hymns by the pupils and disciples of the *Rsis* in the abodes of learning, (Rv. viii. 103, 5), a grotesquely beautiful comparison, no doubt. There are whole *Suktas* devoted to *Mantras* for taking off poison injected by the bites of poisonous snakes and insects, which proves that these reptiles were numerous in ancient Sapta-Sindhu (Rv. i. 191; vii. 50). Fishes also have been mentioned (Rv. x. 68, 8), and the *Mahāmīna*, or the large fish, referred to in Rv. viii. 67, could be no other than the whale. There was a country called *Matsyadeśa* to the

¹ *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. XII, p. 742.

south-east of Sapta-Sindhu, probably at the junction of the Rājputānā and the Eastern Seas, which was so called probably on account of the abundance of fish obtained there on the sea-coasts.

Among birds, mention is made in the Ṛgveda of peacocks (iii. 45, 1) of which, it is said, there were 21 species (Rv. i. 191, 14), falcons (Śyena) (*F. Peregrinator*), goose or swan (*Haṃsa*) (iii. 8, 9; viii. 35, 8 and ix. 32, 3), quails (*Vartika*) (i. 112, 8), Francoline partridge (*Kapinjala*) (ii. 42 and 43), black daws (*kṛṣṇa śakuṇa*) (ix. 16, 6), owl (*Ulūka*), whose screeches were regarded as inauspicious (x. 165, 5 and 6), *Cakravāḥas* or ruddy geese, parrots (*Śuka*) and the vulture (*Gṛdhra*) (x. 123, 8). Bird-catchers are mentioned in the Ṛgveda, who either netted or snared them and sold them to those who were fond of birds' flesh. (Rv. i. 92, 10).

Of the Flora in ancient Sapta-Sindhu, the Aśvattha (*Ficus religiosa*) was called the *Vanaspati*, or "king of forest" on account of its size and tallness. It was held sacred, and its wood was used for making Soma-vessels. Professor Macdonell has translated it by the word "horse-stand," probably suggesting thereby that the shade of the tree was used for stabling horses. But it has been derived otherwise by Sanskrit Etymologists, and is meant to be the tree that is not of yesterday, but stands from olden times. And, in reality, the Aśvattha is not short-lived, and can easily withstand violent storms and blasts of wind. The Ṛgveda, however, does not mention the other well-known sacred tree of the plains, viz., the *Nyagrodha* or *Vata* (*Ficus Indicus*). This was probably a native of the Deccan. The Śāml tree (*Acacia suma*) is mentioned in the Ṛgveda (x. 31, 10). as well as the Palāśa (*Butea Frondosa*) (x. 97, 5) and the Śālmali (*Eriodendron anfractuosum*) (x. 85, 2). There is also mention of the *Khadira* (*Mimosa catechu*) and of the Śimśapā (*Dalbergia Sisu*) in Rv. iii. 53, 19. The scholiast says that the bolts of the axles of carts and chariots were made of the *Khadira*

wood, and the Śimsapā furnished the wood for the floor. The Simbul or Simul (*Bombax malabarica*) is also mentioned in Rv. iii. 53, 22. The Soma grew on the Mujavat peak of the Himālaya, as also in the plains. The *Iksu* or sugar-cane is also mentioned (ix. 86, 18). *Yava* or barley, (v. 85, 3; x. 69, 3) and *Dhānya* or rice (x. 94, 13) are also mentioned as the principal crops cultivated. As regards *Dhānya*, I was surprised to read the following remarks of Professor Macdonell: "Rice which is familiar to the later Vedas, and regarded in them as one of the necessities of life is not mentioned in the Ṛgveda at all. Its natural habitat is in the south-east, the regular monsoon area, where the rain-fall is very abundant. Hence it probably did not exist in the region of the Indus river-system when the Ṛgveda was composed, though in later times, with the practice of irrigation, its cultivation spread to all parts of India."¹ This supposition of the Professor is gratuitous, as we have already proved that rains were abundant in ancient Sapta-Sindhu on account of its proximity to the seas, and helped the tillers in the cultivation of paddy which is also distinctly mentioned in the Ṛgveda.² (x. 94. 13). (Read also *Ṛgvedic Culture*, ch. vii).

Mention is also made of sweet edible fruits, available in the forests in great abundance (Rv. x. 146, 3), as well as of many flowery creepers and medicinal herbs. The white lotus (Rv. x. 142, 8) was the favourite flower among the ancient Aryans, and was obtained from the lakes. The mango-tree is nowhere mentioned, as it probably was indigenous to South India, nor is the *Śāla* (*Shorea robusta*), the famous timber-tree of the submontane regions of the Himālaya and of the Deccan. The *Kūśa* was the sacred grass which was largely used in the performance of sacrifices.

Of Minerals, mention has been made of gold, silver, copper, iron and precious stones in the Ṛgveda. The

¹ Macdonell's *History of Sanskrit Literature*, p. 146.

² Rv. x. 94. 13 यपद्मो नीलमिव धात्रीकृतः सुवर्णि सोमं न निनन्ति वसत

ancient Aryans, both men and women, were fond of bedecking their persons with gold ornaments, either plain or set with precious stones. Coins were made both of gold and silver. But whether copper coins were in existence is not quite clear. Iron was largely used for making weapons of war, and agricultural implements. Mailed coats were also made of iron. There is also mention of iron forts which were probably so called in a figurative sense on account of their strength and invincibility. It would thus appear that even in Rgvedic times, the Aryans were acquainted with the various uses of the principal metals, and had already passed the stone age of civilisation. To trace up their history to that age would be à feat as impossible as that of drawing a landscape in blinding and impenetrable darkness. The ancient Aryans had reached a very high rung of the ladder of civilisation, when the rest of the world did not even approach its foot. These metals and precious stones were procurable in the northern mountainous regions of Sapta-Sindhu. Even in comparatively recent times, the Babylonians used to draw their supply of gold and precious stones from these regions. Ctesias says expressly that the precious stones were imported from India, and that onyxes, sardines and the other stones used for seals were obtained in the mountains bordering on the sandy desert. "Emeralds and jaspers," says Theophrastus a more recent author but worthy of credit, "which are used as objects of decorations came from the desert of Bactria (of Cobi). They are sought for by persons who go thither on horse-back at the time of the north-wind which blows away the sand, and discovers them."

"The country where gold is found and which the griffins infest" says Ctesias, "is exceedingly desolate. The Bactrians who dwell in the neighbourhood of the Indians, assert that the griffins watch over the gold, though the Indians themselves deny that they do anything of the kind, as they have no need of the metal; but (say they) the griffins are only anxious on account of their young, and these are the

objects of their protection. The Indians go armed into the desert (of Cobi) in troops of a thousand or two thousand men. But we are assured that they do not return from these expeditions till the third or the fourth year."

These classical accounts go to prove that there was abundance of gold and precious stones in Sapta-Sindhu which extended as far as Bactria in R̥gvedic times.

Of the Minerals in Sapta-Sindhu, no mention is made of salt in the R̥gveda, although the Salt Range exists in the very heart of the country from time immemorial, and salt could also be manufactured from the sea-water, if any necessity arose. This has led some European scholars to infer that the ancient Aryans were not at all acquainted with the use of salt. As Professor Macdonell has rightly observed, it is "a good illustration of the dangers of *argumentum ex silentio*." Such an argument would be as absurd as to say that the ancient Aryans did not know the use of shoes (*Upānaha*), as they are not mentioned in the R̥gveda, although the warriors had helmets on their heads, breast-plates on their breasts, iron mail-coats on their bodies and skin-gloves on their hands, and that the only limbs that they omitted or did not care to protect were their legs and feet that required as much protection as the other limbs, more particularly to enable them to march easily over grounds, rough, hot and cold. It is often forgotten that the R̥gveda is not a history of the ancient Aryans, in the proper sense of the word, but only a collection of hymns addressed to their various Gods; and it is indeed a matter for wonder that in a work, essentially religious, there should be found so many evidences of the incidents of their secular life and material civilisation, which, when carefully read, give us a pretty good idea of their modes of living and thought. Would it not, therefore, be rash to deduce an inference from the omission of the mention of a particular article or custom in the R̥gveda, and to say that it did not at all exist?

However this may be, we hope. we have been able to draw an approximate picture of the physical features of ancient Sapta-Sindhu, and its fauna, flora, and minerals. We have shown (1) that the Sarasvatī was a mighty stream in those ancient days, with water flowing through her channel all the year round, which was probably perennially supplied by melted snow at her source, and that her banks, as well as the banks of the other rivers, were inhabited by a prosperous people, fond of holding sacrifices in honour of their Gods; (2) that the submontane regions of the Himālaya and the valley of Kashmir were also inhabited by Aryan tribes; (3) that the country, besides being intersected by the rivers, had also long stretches of forests, and a desert in the south; (4) that the banks of the Sindhu were also well populated, and had important centres of manufacture in wool, woollen goods, and cotton fabrics; (5) that the horses bred in the region of the Sindhu were famous, and probably in great demand throughout the country; (6) that the forests were infested with wild animals such as the wolf, the lion, the wild boar, the elephant, the monkey, the bear, the jackal, the bison, the buffalo, the deer and the antelope; (7) that the black buck, held sacred by the sacrifice-loving Aryans, was a distinguishing mark of the land inhabited by them; (8) that barley, rice, millet, and probably other cereals also were the principal products of Aryan agriculture; (9) that they domesticated the cow, the buffalo, the ass, the horse, the goat, the dog, the sheep and the camel, and caught and tamed even the wild elephant; and (10) that they were acquainted with the use of gold, silver, copper, iron and precious stones that were the products of either Sapta-Sindhu, or of contiguous regions. It was indeed a self-contained country possessing an equable climate, providing all the necessities of life, and affording facilities for advancing towards a higher civilisation and developing all those traits of character that make a people great. Though divided into numerous clans and tribes, the more advanced Aryans were a homogeneous people who felt a mysterious

impulse to develop their peculiar genius; and actuated by that impulse, they tried their best to get rid of all discordant elements, and eliminate them from their community. They were engaged in their noble and arduous task of self-assertion and self-determination for a long time, but the story of their struggle will be narrated in a subsequent chapter.

CHAPTER VI.

THE DECCAN OR SOUTHERN INDIA IN R̥GVEDIC TIMES.

As we have already said, there is no mention whatever in the R̥gveda of the Deccan, or the Vindhya mountains, or the famous rivers of the Southern Peninsula like the Narmadā, the Godāvari, the Kṛṣṇā, etc., or of the peoples inhabiting that country.¹ It is therefore not at all possible to describe the country from any internal evidence of the R̥gveda. The Deccan was completely cut off from Sapta-Sindhu by the Rājputānā Sea, and the Sea occupying the Gangetic trough; and the Aryans did not care to go to that country, dark and unknown, by crossing the deep and dangerous sea. If they ever migrated or extended in any direction during R̥gvedic times, they did so by the overland route in the direction of Gandhāra, Bactriana, Persia and Western Asia. There were undoubtedly sea-going vessels and merchant-ships in Sapta-Sindhu; but navigation in those early days was most difficult and dangerous, and ship-wrecks were probably very common occurrences. We may therefore safely surmise that the multitude generally avoided the sea-route for going to any foreign country. It was only the covetous and daring Aryan merchants, the *Vaniks* or *Paṇis*, as they are called in the R̥gveda, who ventured on a sea-voyage for the purpose of trading in neighbouring countries. It is just possible that the Aryan merchants crossed the Rājputānā Sea, and traded along the Western coast of the Deccan, exchanging the surplus products of Sapta-Sindhu for those of the latter country. But it is extremely doubtful whether the Malabar coast existed in those days in its present shape. There is geological evidence to prove that in very early times, Southern India formed part of a huge continent which extended from Burma and South China on the east, to

¹ *Vide* Appendix (A) to this Chapter.

East and South Africa on the west, and from the Vindhya hills on the north to Australia on the south ; and it was probably not connected anywhere with Western Asia, though there is reason to believe that it had some connection with the Eastern Himālaya through Assam. This continent was bounded on the north, as we have already seen, by a long stretch of sea extending from Assam to the southern coast of Sind as it then was, and joined with what the classical writers called the Erythræan Sea, or the Arabian Sea, as we now call it.

This Southern Continent existed from early Permian times up to the close of the Miocene epoch, according to Mr. H. F. Blanford. Mr. Alfred Russel Wallace says : " It (this continent) represents what was probably a primary zoological region in some past geological epoch ; but what that epoch was and what were the limits of the region in question, we are quite unable to say. If we are to suppose that it comprised the whole area now inhabited by Lemuroid animals, we must make it extend from West Africa to Burma, South China and Celebes, an area which it probably did once occupy."¹

Elsewhere he writes : " It is evident that during much of the Tertiary period, Ceylon and South India were bounded on the north by a considerable extent of sea, and probably formed part of an extensive Southern Continent or great island. The very numerous and remarkable cases of affinity with Malaya require, however, some closer approximation with these islands, which probably occurred at a later period. When, still later, the great plains and tablelands of Hindostan were formed and a permanent land communication effected with the rich and highly developed Himalo-Chinese fauna, a rapid immigration of new types took place, and many of the less specialised forms of mammalia and birds became

¹ "The Geographical Distribution of Animals with a study of the relations of living and extinct Faunas, as elucidating the past changes of the Earth's surface" London, Macmillan & Co. 1870 Vol. I, pp. 76-77.

extinct. Among reptiles and insects, the competition was less severe, or the older forms were too well adapted to local conditions to be expelled; so that it is among these groups alone that we find any considerable number of what are probably the remains of the ancient fauna of a now submerged Southern Continent."¹

Mr. H. F. Blanford says: "The affinities between the fossils of both animals and plants of the Beaufort group of Africa and those of the Indian Panchets and Kathmis are such as to suggest the former existence of a land connexion between the two areas. But the resemblance of the African and Indian fossil-faunas does not cease with Permian and Triassic times. The plant beds of the Utenhage group have furnished eleven forms of plants, two of which Mr. Tate has identified with Indian Rajmehal plants. The Indian Jurassic fossils have yet to be described (with a few exceptions), but it has been stated that Dr. Stoliezka was much struck with the affinities of certain of the Cutch fossils to African forms; and Dr. Stoliezka and Mr. Griesbach have shown that of the Cretaceous fossils of the Umtafuni river in Natal, the majority (22 out of 35 described forms) are identical with species from Southern India.

"With regard to the geographical evidence, a glance at the map will show that from the neighbourhood of the west coast of India to that of the Seychelles, Madagascar, and the Mauritius, extends a line of coral atolls and banks, including Adas Bank, the Laccadives, Maldives, the Chagos group and the Saya-de-Mulha, all indicating the existence of a submerged mountain range or ranges. The Seychelles, too, are mentioned by Mr. Darwin as rising from an extensive and tolerably level bank having a depth of between 30 and 40 fathoms; so that, although now partly encircled by fringing reefs, they may be regarded as a virtual extension of the same submerged axis.

¹ *Ibid* pp. 328-329.

Further west, the Cosmolédo and Comoro Islands consist of atolls and islands surrounded by barrier reefs; and these bring us pretty close to the present shores of Africa and Madagascar. It seems at least probable that in this chain of atolls, banks and barrier reefs, we have indicated the position of an ancient mountain chain, which possibly formed the back-bone of a tract of later Palæozoic, Mesozoic and early Tertiary land, being related to it much as the Alpine and Himalayan system is to the European-Asiatic continent, and the Rocky Mountains and Andes to the two Americas. As it is desirable to designate this Mesozoic land by a name, I would propose that of Indo-Oceanea. Professor Huxley has suggested on palæontological grounds that a land connexion existed in this region (or rather between Abyssinia and India) during the Miocene epoch. From what has been said above, it will be seen that I infer its existence from a far earlier date. With regard to its depression, the only present evidence relates to its northern extremity and shows that it was in this region, later than the great trap flows of the Dakhan. These enormous sheets of volcanic rock are remarkably horizontal to the east of the Ghats and the Sahyadri range, but to the west of this, they begin to dip seawards, so that the island of Bombay is composed of the higher part of the formation. This indicates only that the depression to the westward has taken place in Tertiary times, and to that extent, Professor Huxley's inference, that it was after the Miocene period, is quite consistent with the geological evidence.

"Palæontology, physical geography and geology, equally with the ascertained distribution of living animals and plants, offer their concurrent testimony to the former close connexion of Africa and India, including the tropical islands of the Indian Ocean. The Indo-Oceanic land appears to have existed from at least early Permian times, probably (as Professor Huxley has pointed out) up to the close of the Miocene epoch; and South Africa and Peninsular India are the

existing remnants of that ancient land. It may not have been absolutely continuous during the whole of this long period. Indeed, the Cretaceous rocks of Southern India and Southern Africa, and the marine Jurassic beds of the same regions, prove that some portions of it were for longer or shorter periods, invaded by the Sea ; but any break of continuity was probably not prolonged ; for Mr. Wallace's investigation in the Eastern Archipelago have shown how narrow a sea may offer an insuperable barrier to the migration of land animals. In Palæozoic times, this land must have been connected with Australia, and in Tertiary times with Malayana, since the Malayan forms with African alliances are in several cases distinct from those of India. We know as yet too little of the geology of the eastern peninsula to say from what epoch dates the connexion with Indo-Oceanic land. Mr. Theobald has ascertained the existence of Triassic, Cretaceous and Nummulitic rocks in the Arabian coast range, and Carboniferous limestone is known to occur from Moulmein southward, while the range east of the Irrawadi is formed of younger Tertiary rocks. From this it would appear that a considerable part of the Malaya Peninsula must have been occupied by the sea during the greater part of the Mesozoic and Eocene periods. Plant-bearing rocks of Raniganj age have been identified as forming the outer spurs of the Sikkim Himâlaya ; the ancient land must therefore have extended some distance to the north of the present Gangetic delta. Coal both of Cretaceous and Tertiary age occurs in the Khasi hills, and also in upper Assam, but in both cases, associated with marine beds ; so that it would appear that in this region, the boundaries of land and sea oscillated somewhat during Cretaceous and Eocene times. To the north-west of India, the existence of great formations of Cretaceous and Nummulitic age, stretching far through Baluchistan and Persia, and entering into the structure of the north-west Himâlaya prove that in the later Mesozoic and Eocene ages India had no direct communication with western Asia ; while the Jurassic

rocks of Cutch, the Salt Range, and the northern Himalaya show that in the preceding period the sea covered a large part of the present Indus basin; and the Triassic, Carboniferous, and still more recent marine formations of the Himalaya indicate that from very early times till the upheaval of that great chain, much of its present site was for ages covered by the Sea."

Mr. Blanford thus sums up the views advanced by him:

"1st—The plant-bearing series of India ranges from early Permian to the latest Jurassic times, indicating (except in a few cases and locally) the uninterrupted continuity of land and fresh-water conditions. These may have prevailed from much earlier times.

"2nd—In the early Permian, as in the Post-Pliocene age, a cold climate prevailed down to low latitudes, and I am inclined to believe in both hemispheres simultaneously. With the decrease of cold, the flora and reptilian fauna of Permian times were diffused to Africa, India, and possibly Australia; or the flora may have existed in Australia somewhat earlier, and have been diffused thence.

"3rd—India, South Africa and Australia were connected by an Indo-Oceanic Continent in the Permian epoch; and the two former countries remained connected (with at the utmost only short interruptions) up to the end of the Miocene period. During the latter part of the time, this land was also connected with Malaya.

"4th—In common with some previous writers, I consider that the position of this land was defined by the range of coral reefs and banks that now exist between the Arabian Sea and East Africa.

"5th—Up to the end of the Nummulitic epoch, no direct connexion (except possibly for short periods) existed between India and Western Asia."¹

¹ H. F. Blanford "On the Age and Correlations of the Plant-bearing series of India and the former existence of an Indo-Oceanic Continent," Quarterly Journal of the Geological Society, Vol. XXXI, 1875, pp. 534-540.

From the above extracts it would appear that South India remained connected with South Africa up to the end of the Miocene Epoch, as a huge continent, completely cut off from Sapta-Sindhu or the modern Punjab, by a long stretch of sea, extending from Assam to the Arabian sea. Though Mr. Blanford establishes the connection of India, South Africa and Australia in the Permian epoch, it is possible that the connection lasted with interruptions till the end of the Miocene epoch or even later when man flourished on the globe, as we shall see later on; and that the isolation of Sapta-Sindhu continued till a much later period.

Mr. Ernst Haeckel thus writes about the ancient Southern Continent: "This large continent of former times Sceler, an Englishman, has called *Lemuria*, from the monkey-like animals which inhabited it, and it is at the same time of great importance from being the probable cradle of the human race which in all likelihood here first developed out of anthropoid apes."¹

Elsewhere he writes "There are a number of circumstances (especially chronological facts) which suggest that the primeval home of man was a continent now sunk below the surface of the Indian Ocean, which extended along the south of Asia, as it is at present (and probably in direct connection with it), towards the east, as far as Further India and the Sunda Islands; towards the west, as far as Madagascar and the south-eastern shores of Africa."²

Whether this continent was the original cradle of mankind or not, there can be no doubt that man existed here from very early times, and that his creation in this continent was made possible only after the creation of anthropoid apes which were his nearest approach. There is evidence of the existence of Pliocene man in the valley gravels of the Nar-

¹ Ernst Haeckel's "History of Creation," 2nd Ed., 1876. Vol. I, pp. 360-61.

² Ernst Haeckel's "History of Creation," 1876. Vol. II, pp. 325-26.

made and of Miocene man in Upper Burma.¹ It can, therefore, be safely surmised that man had existed in this continent long before the time when the greater portion of it was submerged in consequence of a violent cataclysm. Though Sapta-Sindhu was not directly connected with it, conditions similar to those of the lost continent must have prevailed there, which favoured the creation of a family of human beings entirely different from that of the Southern Continent; and these were the progenitors of the Aryan race who, having been endowed with higher mental faculties, developed a civilisation which was destined to dominate the whole world, and uplift the entire human race.

It is possible that the same seismic forces that caused the subsidence of the greater portion of the Southern Continent also caused the upheaval of the bed of the Rájputáná Sea; and if these two events were simultaneous and synchronous, they must have occurred long after R̥gvedic times; for the Rájputáná Sea had been in existence, when some at least of the ancient hymns of the R̥gveda were composed. The upheaval of its bed must have caused, by the displacement of the vast volumes of its waters, a deluge in Sapta-Sindhu, known as Manu's Flood, which we have discussed in a previous chapter. The depression of the Aravalli mountain was also probably due to the same causes that upheaved the sea-bed and submerged a large portion of the Southern Continent. It is related in the Puráṇas that the great sage Agastya sipped up the ocean dry and caused the high peaks of the Vindhya mountains to bend, when he crossed over to Southern India, where he was the first to lead an Aryan colony. This sipping up of the ocean and bending down of the Vindhya are undoubtedly connected with the physical disturbances that led to the drying up of the Rájputáná Sea and the depression of the Aravalli mountain, as the Vindhya is called, and have been fathered upon Agastya who

¹ *The Students' Lyell* (1896) pp. 236, 237, 45. *The Story of Primitive Man* (1895) p. 3. Read also Appendix (B) to this Chapter.

first ventured to the south. This Agastya, however, is not the Vedic bard of that name, but probably one of his descendants who, as was the custom in those ancient days, bore the patronymic of Agastya. This tradition which is connected with an undoubted physical fact goes to prove the antiquity of the Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu and of the R̥gveda.

But to return to our account of the Deccan in R̥gvedic times. It formed part of a vast southern continent that extended, as we have seen, from Further India to south-eastern Africa, and probably as far south as Australia. The stage of the civilisation of the original human inhabitants of this vast continent may well be judged by that of their descendants who are the present remnants of the race in Africa, South India, Australia, the islands of the Indian Archipelago, and the islands scattered in the Bay of Bengal and the Indian Ocean. Most of them are in the same primitive condition of life as their progenitors were in, hundreds of thousands of years ago. The Kolarian and the Dravidian races of the Indian Peninsula are allied to the Negroid races of Africa, with such modifications in their physical features and characteristics as climate and different environments have imposed upon them; and there can be no doubt that they were the original inhabitants of the lost continent. Of the Kolarians and the Dravidians, it seems that some tribes of the latter made some progress towards civilisation, which was further advanced by their having come in contact with the Aryans after a communication had been effected between Sapta-Sindhu and the Southern Peninsula by the drying up of the Rájputáná Sea. The Kolarians, on the other hand, except such as came in contact with the Aryans on the borders of the Gangetic plains in later times, have remained in their primitive savage condition. A brief account of some of the primitive tribes of both the races will be found interesting here :

“ Among the rudest fragments of mankind are the isolated Andaman islanders in the Bay of Bengal. The old Arab and

European voyagers described them as dog-faced man-eaters. The English officers, sent to the islands in 1855 to establish a settlement, found themselves surrounded by quite naked cannibals of a ferocious type, who daubed themselves when festive with red earth and mourned in suit of olive-coloured mud. They made a noise like weeping to express friendship or joy, bore only names of common gender which they received before birth, and their sole conception of a god was an evil spirit who spread disease. For five years, they repulsed every effort at intercourse by showers of arrows; but the officers slowly brought them to a better frame of mind by building sheds near the settlement where these poor beings might find shelter from the tropical rains, and receive medicines and food.

"The Anamalai Hills in Southern Madras form the refuge of a whole series of broken tribes. Five hamlets of long-haired wild-looking Puliers live on jungle products, mice or any small animals that they can catch, and worship demons. Another clan, the Mundavers, shrink from contact with the outside world, and possess no fixed dwellings, but wander over the innermost hills with their cattle, sheltering themselves under little leaf-sheds, and seldom remaining in the same spot more than a year. The thick-lipped small-bodied Kadus 'Lords of Hills' are the remnants of a higher race. They file the front teeth of the upper jaw as a marriage ceremony, live by the chase, and wield some influence over the ruder forest-folk. These hills, now very thinly peopled, abound in the great stone monuments (*kistvaens* and *dolmens*) which the primitive tribes used for their dead. The Nairs of south-western India still practise polyandry, according to which a man's property descends not to his own but to his sister's children. This system also appears among the Himalayan tribes at the opposite extremity of India.

"In the Central Provinces, the aboriginal races form a large portion of the population. In certain districts, as in the Feudatory State of Bastar, they amount to three-fifths of the

inhabitants. The most important race, the Gonds, have made some advances in civilisation ; but the wilder tribes still cling to the forest, and live by the chase, with, a few years back, flint points for their arrows. The Marias wield bows of great strength, which they hold with their feet, while they draw the strings with both hands. A still wilder tribe, the Maris, fly from their grass-built huts on the approach of a stranger. Once a year, a messenger comes to them from the local Raja to take their tribute of jungle products. He does not enter their hamlets, but beats a drum outside, and then hides himself. The shy Maris creep forth, place what they have to give in an appointed spot, and run back again into their retreats.

“Further to the north-east, in the tributary states of Orissa, there is a poor tribe, 10,000 in number, of Juangs or *Pātuás*, literally the ‘leaf-wearers,’ whose women formerly wore no clothes. Their only vestige of covering was a few strings of beads round the waist with a bunch of leaves, tied before and behind.¹ Those under the British influence were

¹ Col. Dalton thus writes about the Juangs in his *Descriptive Ethnology of Bengal*, p. 155 :—

“The females of the group (the Juangs of Keunjhar) had not amongst them a particle of clothing. Their sole covering for purposes of decency consisted in a girdle composed of several strings of beads from which depended before and behind small curtains of leaves. Adam and Eve sewed fig-leaves together and made themselves aprons. The Juangs are not so far advanced ; they take young shoots of the A’san (*Terminalia tomentosa*), or any tree with young soft leaves, and arranging them so as to form a flat and scale-like surface of the required size, the sprigs are simply stuck in the girdle, fore and aft, and the toilet is complete. The girls were well developed and finely formed specimens of the race, and as the light leafy costume let the outlines of the figure entirely nude, they would have made good studies for sculpture. Next day they came to my tent at noon, and whilst I conversed with the males on their customs, language, and religion, the girls sat nestled together in a corner for a long time silent and motionless as statues ; but after an hour or two elapsed, the crouching nymphs showed signs of life and symptoms of uneasiness, and more attentively regarding them, I found that great tears were dropping from the down-cast eyes like dew drops on the green leaves.

clothed in 1871 by order of Government, and their native chief was persuaded to do the same work for the others. This leaf-wearing tribe had no knowledge of the metals till quite lately, when foreigners came among them, and no word exists in their language for iron, or any other metal. But this country abounds with flint weapons, so that the Juangs form a remnant, to our own day, of the Stone Age. 'Their huts' writes the officer who knows them best 'are among the smallest that human beings ever deliberately constructed as dwellings. They measure about 6 feet by 8. The head of the family and all the females huddle together in this one shell, not much larger than a dog-kennel.' The boys and the young men of the village live in one large building apart by themselves; and this custom of having a common abode for the whole male youth of the hamlet is found among many of the aboriginal tribes in distant parts of India. The Kandhs of Orissa who kept up their old tribal ritual of human sacrifice until it was put down by the British in 1835-45, and the Santals in the west of Lower Bengal who rose in 1855, are examples of powerful and highly developed non-Aryan tribes."¹

Now, look at this brief survey of some of the wild tribes of the Dravidian and the Kolarian races of the Southern Peninsula, who are probably in the same primitive condition of savages to-day as their ancestors were in, thousands, nay hundreds of thousands of years ago, little removed from the state of brutes, living by the chase, eating human flesh and raw meat, some of them totally ignorant of the use of metals, and using flint weapons, as if mankind was still in its infancy and did not progress beyond the Stone Age—their women going nearly stark naked, and huddling together with the

On my tenderly seeking the cause of their distress, I was told that the leaves were becoming dry, stiff and uncomfortable, and if they were not allowed to go to the woods for a change, the consequence would be serious, and they certainly could not dance. It was a bright, dry day, and the crisp rustling, as they rose to depart, confirmed the statement."

¹ *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Vol. XII, p. 477. (Ninth Edition).

chief of the family in kennel-huts, 6 feet by 8, and many tribes possessing no marriage-laws or custom to speak of—I say, just look at this picture and think whether these men, even if they were not in a far worse condition thousands of years ago, could ever immigrate from far-off Central Asia over the snowy ranges of the Himālaya, across rapid and wide rivers, and deep impassable seas, and dreary deserts, to the plains of the Punjab or the hilly forest-tracts of Central and Southern India. Even if the Aryans be regarded as immigrants to Sapta-Sindhu, and supposed to have waged a long sanguinary warfare (which we cannot bring ourselves to think to be at all likely) with these primitive savages of the Stone Age, who had nothing but rude stone weapons and missiles for offence or defence, and were therefore no match for their superior adversaries,—and to have driven them to the Southern Peninsula, how could these savages cross the sea over the Gangetic trough and the Rājputānā Sea, of whose existence we find unmistakable evidence in the Ṛgveda? Such a feat would be impossible for naked savages to accomplish, as it would be impossible for the fauna and flora to do. The fact of the matter is that the Dravidian or the Kolarian races never came from Central Asia to the Punjab, nor did they ever come into conflict or contact with the Aryans during Ṛgvedic times; that Sapta-Sindhu was a distinct country from Southern India, cut off as it was by seas; that the Aryans were as much autochthones in Sapta-Sindhu as these wild tribes were in Southern India which, as we have seen, formed part of a huge continent extending from Burma and South China to Eastern and Southern Africa, and as far south as Australia; that these savages, though looking like men, were little removed from the condition of anthropoid apes or brutes, in which some of their tribes are still to be found; that they passed through the palæolithic and the neolithic stages of development, of which they have left ample evidences in the valley gravels of the Narmada, and in the flint weapons found scattered throughout the Southern Peninsula as far north as

Raniganj and Rajmehal in Bengal, and of which the Juangs of Orissa are still the living survivals; that some of the Kolarian tribes, notably the Santals, and some of the Dravidians living in the southern-most part of the Peninsula, notably the Cholas, the Pandyas, and the Cheralas or Keralas, circumstanced as they were, and probably having come in contact with the Aryans, learnt the use of the metals and made some progress towards civilisation, but the rest remained in their rude primitive condition, and as ignorant as ever of the arts of civilised life. That these savages of Southern India were autochthonous would further be proved by the undoubted fact that "the aboriginal tribes in Southern and Western Australia use almost the same words for *I, thou, he, we, you* &c., as the fishermen on the Madras coast, and resemble in many ways the Madras Hill tribes, as in the use of their national weapon, the boomerang."¹ There is also some linguistic affinity between the Dravidian languages and the languages in some of the islands in the distant Pacific Ocean. As a writer says: "That some of the islands in the distant Pacific Ocean were peopled either from the Dravidian settlements in India, or from an earlier common source, remains a conjectural induction of philosophers rather than established fact."² It would certainly not have remained a conjectural induction of philosophers, but would have been an established ethnological fact by this time, had the fact of Southern India forming part of a huge continent, now submerged, but extending in ancient times from the coasts of the Pacific Ocean to South Africa and Australia been taken into account. A large portion of the continent having been submerged, the remnants of it, with their human inhabitants, became isolated and separated from one another by wide oceans, and the only evidences of their having once belonged to the same continent are now to be found in the similarities of their fauna, flora, original human inhabitants and their languages, such as have survived

¹ *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Vol. III, p. 778 (Ninth Edition).

² *Ibid.*, p. 778.

the changes and modifications imposed upon them by time, circumstances, and altered environments. ¹

There can thus be no doubt that the Kolarian and the Dravidian races were the original inhabitants of Southern India, and the theory of their having been immigrants from Central Asia first to the Punjab, and then, through the pressure of the invading Aryans, to the Southern Peninsula, is more fanciful than real. It is also certain that when the Indo-Oceanic Continent or Lemuria was submerged, it was inhabited by human beings in very low stages of development, and this is proved by the existence of aboriginal savages in South Africa, Australia, Southern India, and the islands in the Indian Ocean and of the Indian Archipelago, who, though probably belonging to the same human family, became isolated and separated from one another, and developed

¹ As a further illustration of the point we may mention the Veddas of Ceylon and the Sakais and Semangs of the Malay Peninsula who wonderfully resemble one another in their physical features. Mr. Thurston in his introduction to *Castes and Tribes of Southern India* (p. 33) writes: "Speaking of the Sakais, the same authorities (Skeat and Blagden) state that 'in evidence of their striking resemblance to the Veddas, it is worth remarking that one of the brothers, Sarasin, who had lived among the Veddas and knew them very well, when shown a photograph of a typical Sakai, at first supposed it to be a photograph of a Vedda.' For myself when I saw the photographs of Sakais published by Skeat and Blagden, it was difficult to realize that I was not looking at pictures of Kadirs, Paniyans, Kurumbas or other jungle folk of Southern India." This testimony also goes to prove the existence of the lost Indo-Oceanic continent which was peopled by these allied tribes. The linguistic affinity also has been established by Pater Schmidt in his *Die Mon-Khmer-Völker* among the following groups of languages.—The Munda languages of India, Nikobar spoken in the Nikobar islands; Khasi spoken in the Khasi Hills of Assam; Palong Wa, and Riang of Salwin basin, Upper Burma; Sakai and Semang languages of the Malay Peninsula, and the Mon-Khmer languages. Dr. Konow also, working from the point of view of India proper, has been able to show that the Munda languages are connected with Mon-Khmer. These allied groups of languages have been styled Austro-Asiatic by Schmidt who postulates the existence of an Austro-Asiatic race characterised "by long or medium head, horizontal non-oblique eyes, broad nostrils, dark skin, more or less wavy hair and short or medium stature." (vide R. Chanda's *The Indo-Aryan Races*, p. 10).

distinguishing characteristics harmoniously with the changes of their environments and climate.

I have spoken only of the Dravidian and Kolarian aborigines of Southern India, but along with them should be mentioned the savage tribes inhabiting the hills of Upper Burma, Assam, Tippera and the North-East frontier of India, who belong to the Mongolian family. These are the Abors, the Akas, the Mishmis, the Nāgās, the Chākmas and others who, in some pre-historic time, had probably lived side by side with the forefathers of the present Mongollans and the Chinese, and crossed over into India through the north-eastern passes. "Some of the hill languages in Eastern Bengal" says a writer, "preserve Chinese terms, others contain Mongolian. Thus the Nāgās in Assam still use words for *three* and *water*, which might almost be understood in the streets of Canton" ¹

These wild tribes probably drove the Kolarians from these hilly tracts and the spurs of the Eastern Himalaya into the Southern Peninsula. It will be in the recollection of our readers that Mr. H. F. Blanford has said that the ancient land of the Southern Peninsula "extended some distance to the north of the present Gangetic delta," connecting itself with the Khasi Hills and Upper Assam. A contributor to the *Encyclopædia Britannica* writes: "It is highly probable that the Jurassic and Cretaceous coast-line ran across the northern part of the Bay of Bengal Probably the Jurassic traps of the Rajmehar Hills, west of the Delta of the Ganges, were continuous with those of Sylhet and the Delta." If we bear in mind this connection of the Deccan or Southern India with the hilly tracts of Assam and Sylhet, we shall be able to understand the significance of the following observations made by Mr. J. F. Hewett: "That they (the Kolarian tribes) came from the East is shown by the following facts: First, they

¹ *Encyclopædia Britannica*, Vol. XII, p. 777. (Ninth Edition).

² *Ency. Brit.*, p. 726.

themselves always say that they did so; secondly, the most powerful and purest Kolarian tribes are found in the east; thirdly, their languages are allied to those used on the Bhahma-putra and the Irawaddy by the Kambojans and the Assamese." ¹ The correctness of this belief or tradition among the Kolarians would be clearly proved, if we remembered that the lost Southern Continent extended as far east as Burma and South China. The invasion of the Mongolian wild tribes must have driven them to the south-west right into the heart of the modern Indian Peninsula. They could not of course advance directly westwards, as their progress was barred by the existence of the sea over the Gangetic trough. But some of these tribes, for instance, the Kurkis, marched westward through the Peninsula and are now found some 400 miles distant from the hilly country inhabited by the Santals, with no tradition among them of a common origin.

The Dravidians occupied the western and the southern borders of the Peninsula where their descendants are still found in very large numbers. It seems that their evolution was far in advance of that of the Kolarians, and they made rapid progress towards civilisation after they had come in contact with the highly civilised Aryans in post-Rgvedic times, when the Southern Peninsula became connected with Sapta-Sindhu by the upheaval of the bed of the Râjputânâ Sea. It was a descendant of the great sage Agastya of Rgvedic fame, who, as we have already said, first led an Aryan colony to the south from Sapta-Sindhu, by crossing the dried-up ocean and the Vindhya mountains. Another descendant of this Agastya was a contemporary of the great Râma, the hero of Vâlmiki's Râmâyana, king of Kosala, which was then a flourishing country in the Gangetic plain, stretching far into the Peninsula. The Aryan colonization of the Deccan must, therefore, have occurred thousands of years after the composition of the most ancient hymns of the Rgveda.

¹ Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society, 1888 and 1889.

The poet Vālmiki, who was a contemporary of Rāma, and had his hermitage or *asrāma* near the Chitrakuta Hills, about ten *krośas* to the south of modern Prayāga or Allahabad, knew partly from personal experience, and partly from hearsay, of the extremely savage, nay fierce brute-like condition of the dark human denizens of the hills and extensive forests of Central and Southern India, and called them by the hateful names of *Vānaras* (lit. forest-men, or monkeys), and *Rākṣasas*, the eaters of raw meat and human flesh. The *Vānaras* lived in Kiṣkindhyā which is identified with modern Mysore, and therefore undoubtedly belonged to the Dravidian race; but though they fought their enemies with stones and branches of trees, showing that they still remained in the Stone Age of human progress, they were more morally advanced than the *Rākṣasas* who were full of brutal instincts and propensities and scarcely resembled human beings. The Mundavars and the Puliers of the Anamalai Hills of Southern India, the Juangs of Orissa and the Andamanese of the Bay of Bengal would be described as *Rākṣasas* by a modern poet, as Vālmiki described their forefathers, thousands of years ago. "In the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa"¹ says Professor Sir R. G. Bhandarkar, "which is anterior to the whole of the so-called classical Sanskrit Literature, the sage Viśvāmitra is represented to have condemned by a curse the progeny of fifty of his sons to 'live on the borders' of the Aryan settlements, and these, it is said, were the Andhras, Pundras, Sabaras, Pulindas, and Mutibhas, and the descendants of Viśvāmitra formed a large portion of the Dasyus."² The Andhras are the Telugu people, and it is likely that Aryan colonies led by the descendants of Viśvāmitra were established in Southern India in post-Rgvedic times; and the Aryans, having freely mixed with the original inhabitants, were as proportionately degraded as the aboriginal tribes

¹ *Ait. Brak.* VII. 18.

² Prof. Sir R. G. Bhandarkar's "*Early History of the Dehkan*," Edn. 1884, P. 5.

were uplifted. The age in which the great Sanskrit Grammarian, Pāṇini, flourished is now admitted to be the seventh century B.C., *i.e.* to say, he had flourished long before Buddha was born. From the absence of the names of any country south of Kaccha (Cutch), Avanti, Kosala, Karuṣa and Kalinga in Pāṇini's Grammar, Professor Bhandarkar draws the following inference : " Supposing that the non-occurrence of the name of any country farther south in Pāṇini's work is due to his not having known it, a circumstance which, looking to the many names of places in the north that he gives, appears very probable, the conclusion follows that in his time the Āryas were confined to the north of the Vindhya, but did proceed or communicate with the northern-most portion of the Eastern coast, not by crossing that range, but avoiding it by taking an easterly course."¹ This, we are afraid, is another good illustration of the dangers of *argumentum ex silentio*. The omission of the name of Rāma in Pāṇini's work, though the word occurs in the Ṛgveda as the name of a powerful and generous king,² albeit not of Kosala, cannot certainly prove that the Ṛgveda is a later work than Pāṇini's. Similarly, it would be wrong to argue that because no countries south of the Vindhya are mentioned in Pāṇini's work, therefore he was not acquainted with them, or the Āryas did not settle in Southern India as colonists during or before his time. Such wrong inferences would be easily avoided, if we remembered that Pāṇini's Grammar was composed to help the understanding of the derivation, formation and use of such important words as are mainly found in the Vedic and post-Vedic Literatures, and his omission to mention one word or another in his book did not affect ancient history in any way. As a matter of fact, the Deccan began to be colonized by the Aryan settlers soon after the means of communication with that country by land had been effected by the upheaval or

¹ Bhandarkar's *Early History of the Dehkan*, P. 6.

² Ṛv. x. 93, 14.

drying up of the bed of the Rājputānā Sea and the formation of the Gangetic plains. As we have already said, a descendant of Agastya was the first to cross the Vindhya, and lead an Aryan colony to the south. It is very likely that some descendants of Viśvāmitra also followed in his footsteps, and having settled in the Deccan, mingled with the original inhabitants by ties of marriage, and produced the Andhra people. But this must have happened several thousands of years ago, and not after 700 B.C. as wrongly suggested, nay, concluded by Professor Bhandarkar. A conclusion like this would be not only unreasonable, but highly misleading, to say the least.

As I have already said, even in Rġvedic times, the *Panīs* or *Vaṇīks* who were a branch of the Aryan race and lived on the eastern coasts of Sapta-Sindhu, which afforded safe harbour to their merchant-ships, and supplied them with excellent timber for ship-bulding from the spurs of the Himālaya, and who were hated by their Aryan brethren not only for their extreme avarice and niggardliness, but also for their not subscribing to the tenets of the orthodox Aryan faith, came in contact, in the course of their voyages, with the inhabitants on the coasts of the Southern Continent, though the configuration of the coast-line in those early days must have been quite different from that of the present Southern Peninsula, and imparted to them some of their culture. But the persecutions of these dissenting and avaricious people by the Rġvedic Aryans gradually drove them away from the country, and their expulsion from Sapta-Sindhu became complete, when the Rājputānā Sea was dried up, thereby barring all passage of their ships to the open sea. This must have decided their leaving Sapta-Sindhu for good, and made them seek other convenient sea-coasts for planting new colonies. It is just possible that some of them settled for a time on the Malabar coast of the present Southern Peninsula, not only for the sake of the rich indigenous

products of the country, but also because Indian teak was plentiful there, which afforded excellent timber for ship-building. During their sojourn on this coast, they must have come in contact with the original inhabitants of the Dravidian race, notably the Cholas and the Pāṇdyas, who lived in the extreme south of the Peninsula, and were thus in a position to receive a portion of Aryan culture. It may be surmised that it was from the Paṇis that they first learnt the use of the metals like iron, copper and gold, and the art of ship-building. This intercourse with the Aryan merchants, carried on for a long time, must have resulted in their uplift and ultimate superiority over the other branches of the Dravidian race, and civilised them to a degree beyond the reach of the latter. The opening up of the overland route also from Sapta-Sindhu helped many Aryan tribes to settle in the Deccan along the western sea-coast; and Janasthāna, Gujarat, Saurāstra and Kīṣkindhyā (Mysore) became well-known Aryan settlements, where the Aryans remained engaged, from generation to generation, in spreading light and culture among the savage inhabitants of the dark Peninsula in ancient times. But the mountainous regions of Central India, and the dark, impenetrable, extensive and primeval forests of the Peninsula remained inaccessible to the Aryans for a considerable length of time, which accounts for the primitive savage condition of most of their human denizens down to recent times.

The Paṇis, it may be said here, had a restless spirit of adventure, and there is evidence to prove that some of them settled in Mesopotamia, and afterwards on the sea-coast of Syria, in the islands of the Mediterranean Sea, and on the north coast of Africa, trading along the sea-coasts of Southern Europe and even the coasts of Great Britain and Norway, and spreading Aryan culture—such as was left to them after their banishment from Sapta-Sindhu and their long sojourn in foreign countries among the savage populations of the

lands they visited. These Panis were the ancestors of the Phœnicians of history. They could not, however, help getting mingled with the natives of the different countries they visited and colonized, and gradually lost their characteristics as an Aryan people. We shall tell the interesting story of their expansion in another chapter, and show how they were instrumental in spreading Aryan culture in the west, just as the European merchants and adventurers in modern times have been instrumental in spreading Western civilisation in the East, which only proves the truth of the adage that "History repeats itself." Be that as it may, there can be no question that the Cholas and the Pāṇdyas of Southern India were greatly benefited by their having come in contact with the Panis on the one hand, and the Aryan settlers from the north on the other, and ultimately developed a civilisation which was neither purely Aryan, nor purely Dravidian, but a mixture of both, though the note of the former was dominant. The Cholas and the Pāṇdyas emulated the Panis in their spirit of adventure, and in later times, under the guidance of their Aryan masters, founded colonies in Mesopotamia and Egypt that played important parts in the history of the ancient world. We shall deal with that story more fully in subsequent chapters. Suffice here to say that of the Dravidian and the Kolarian races peopling the Indian Peninsula, the Cholas and the Pāṇdyas were probably the first to be influenced and uplifted by Aryan civilisation and culture, which they helped to spread, along with the Panis or Phœnicians, in Western Asia, Northern Africa and Southern Europe, and which formed the basis, as it were, of the Semitic and European civilisations.¹

Such then, was the Indian Peninsula in R̥gvedic times and after. I hope that my readers have been fully convinced that the Dravidian and the Kolarian races were not immigrants to India from Central Asia, but were autochthones in

¹ *Vide Appendix (C)* to this Chapter.

the now lost Indo-Oceanic Continent, of which Southern India is one of the remnants. Sir Herbert Risley does not support the view of Sir William Hunter and Mr. Hewett about their Central Asiatic home on ethnological and other grounds,¹ and Mr. H. R. Hall also agrees with Sir Herbert Risley in making them the original inhabitants of the Indian Peninsula, where the Dravidians had developed a civilisation which was taken to Mesopotamia, and formed the basis of the Semitic civilisation.² It is gratifying to find that these views find a strong corroboration in the geological evidence that we have adduced in this chapter regarding Southern India forming part of a separate continent, entirely cut off from Sapta-Sindhu in ancient times, which continued to exist as such down to R̥gvedic times.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER VI.

(A) THE DECCAN OR DAKṢIṆĀ'PĀTHA.

Professor D. R. Bhandarkar in his *Carmichael Lectures* (1918), p. 2, has picked out the expression *dakṣiṇapada* from R̥gveda, x. 61, 8, meaning 'with southward foot,' and used with reference to a man who is expelled to the South. "This," rightly observes the Professor, "cannot of course denote the *Dakṣiṇapatha* or Southern India, as we understand it, but rather the country lying beyond the world then inhabited by the Aryans." This country, which was apparently a place for banishment, was probably the strip of desert lying to the south of Sapta-Sindhu along the northern coasts of the Rajputana Sea, and an exile deported to this region was literally between the Devil and the Deep Sea. The desert (Sk. *matu* from *mṛ*, to die) was not fit for human habitation, as it afforded neither shelter nor food, and was regarded as a veritable region of Death. Hence, the southward direction probably came to be associated with the direction over which Yama, the Lord of Death, presided.

¹ *The People of India*, pp. 47-48 Sir H. Risley says: "It is extremely improbable that a large body of very black and conspicuously long-headed types should have come from the one region of the earth which is peopled exclusively by races with broad heads and yellow complexions. With this we may dismiss the theory which assigns a trans-Himalayan origin to the Dravidians."

² *The Ancient History of the Near East*, pp. 171-74.

The expression *dakṣiṇāpāṭā* therefore does not seem to be at all connected with *Dakṣiṇāpāṭha*.

(B) MIOCENE AND PLIOCENE MAN.

Archæologists are not yet agreed about the existence of Miocene Man, though that of Pliocene Man is admitted. Dr. Kelth says: "There is not a single fact known to me which makes the existence of a human form in the Miocene period an impossibility." (*The Antiquity of Man*, p. 511 Ed., 1916). "Judging from the analogy of other species," says Lord Avebury in his *Prehistoric Times* (Ch. XII, p. 403), "I am disposed to think that in the Miocene period man was probably represented by anthropoid apes, more nearly resembling us than do any of the existing quadrumana. *We need not, however, expect necessarily to find the proofs in Europe; our nearest relatives in the animal kingdom are confined to hot, almost to tropical climates; and though we know that during parts of the Miocene period, the climate of Europe was warmer than at present, so that monkeys lived much north of their present limits, still it is in the warmer regions of the earth that we may reasonably find the earliest traces of the human race.*"

It is therefore extremely probable that man first evolved out of anthropoid apes in the Tropics and not in the Torrid Zone. He emigrated to this region after it had become habitable in consequence of a change of climate. The relics of man found in this region are therefore not necessarily the earliest. It is within the bounds of possibility that man appeared in India in the Miocene epoch, as the relics discovered in Further India go to show. (Clodd's *Story of Primitive Man*, p. 23) The geographical distribution of land and water in India in the Pleistocene epoch and later agrees to a very large extent with the description of land and water in the *R̥gveda*, which emboldens us to surmise that Pleistocene man at any rate attained some degree of civilisation in *Sapta-Sindhu*, as suggested by some of the earliest hymns of the *R̥gveda*. It will surely be regarded as a very bold surmise, but we are forced to it by the irresistible evidence found in the *R̥gveda*. The following literature about Pliocene and Miocene man is taken from *Prehistoric Times* (1912), pp. 399-403:

"M. Desnoyers has called attention to some marks noticed by him on bones found in the upper Pliocene beds of St. Prest, and belonging to the *Elephas meridionalis*, *Rhinoceros leptorhinus*, *Hippopotamus major*, several species of deer (including the gigantic *Megiceros Carmichaeli*, Laugel), and two species of *Bos*, which he considers to be of human origin.At the same place (St. Prest), that indefatigable archæologist, M. l'Abbé Bourgeois, has more recently discovered worked flints, including flakes, awls and scrapers, but unfortunately there is some doubt as to the stratigraphical relations of the bed in which they occurred. Moreover, some authorities consider these beds to be Interglacial. In the interglacial coal-beds of Dürnten.....Prof. Rüttimeyer has found a fragment apparently of rough basket or wattle work. The interpretation

in this case again has been questioned, but Prof. Schwendener, who has recently examined the specimena with great care, is decidedly of opinion that it is of human workmanship.

"At the meeting of Spezzia of the 'Société Italienne des Sciences Naturelles,' Prof. G. Ramorino exhibited some bones of Pliocene Age, said to bear marks of knives.

"M. Capellini also has described certain bones supposed to belong to the same geological period, which, in his opinion, bear marks of flint knives... ..

"Dr Dubois has discovered in Java, in a layer apparently of Pliocene Age, to judge from the other mammalian remains, the upper part of the skull, a thigh bone and two teeth of an animal about as large as a chimpanzee, which he regards as having been intermediate between man and the anthropoid apes, and there is this strong support of his view that while the remains, in the opinion of some eminent authorities, are those of an anthropoid ape, allied to the existing gibbons, others are equally convinced that they are those of a low type of man.....

"Dr. Nöetling of the Geological Survey of India, has also recorded unquestionable flint flakes found in Burma with remains of *Rhinoceros perimeus*, and *Hippotherium* (*Hipparion*) *Antelopinum*, in strata considered to belong to the Pliocene period.

"Some archaeologists even consider that we have proof of the presence of man in Miocene times. Thus M. Bourgeois has found in Calcaire de Beauce, near Pontlevoy, many flints which have been subjected to the action of heat, and others which he considers to show marks of human workmanship. On the age of the deposit there is still some difference of opinion, and the action of fire, though it points strongly to, does not absolutely prove, the presence of man. These interesting specimens were found in a stratum which contains the remains of *Acerotherium*, an extinct animal allied to the *Rhinoceros*, and beneath a bed which contains the *Mastodon*, *Dinotherium*, and *Rhinoceros*. The enormous number of these cracked flints also throws some doubt on their being of human origin.

"In the *Matériaux pour l'Histoire de l'Homme* for 1870 is a figure of a flint flake found by M. Tardy in the Miocene beds of Aurillac (Auvergne), together with the remains of *Dinotherium giganteum*, and *Machairodus latidens*..... From the figure given there can be no reasonable doubt that it is of human workmanship. M. Delaunay also has called attention to a rib, found by him at Ponancé (Maine et Loire), and belonging to a well known miocene species, the *Halitherium fossile*; this bears certain marks which closely resemble those which might have been made by flint implements. M. Hanny gives a good figure of this interesting specimen. Whether, however, we have conclusive evidence of the existence of man in Miocene times is a question on which archaeologists are still of different opinions."

The human remains discovered at Piltdown (Sussex) are regarded as belonging to the Pliocene man, the "Dawn Man" as he is called. With regard to the epoch in which the Piltdown race flourished, Dr. Keith says: "Dr. Dawson and Dr. Smith Woodward were ultra cautious assigning a Pleistocene date to the remains found at Piltdown. All the evidence seems to point to a Pliocene age." (*The Antiquity of Man*, p. 315.)

(C) THE PĀNDYAS.

Prof. D. R. Bhandarkar in his *Carmichael Lectures for 1918*, (Calcutta) says that the Pāndyas were the descendants of an Aryan tribe, named Pāṇḍu, who emigrated to the south from the Punjab. "There was" he says "a tribe called Pāṇḍu, round about Mathura, and when a section of them went southwards and were settled there, they were called Pāṇḍyas. This is clear, I think, from Kātyāyana's *Vārtika*, *Pāṇḍor-dyan*, which means that the suffix *ya* was to be attached not to Pāṇḍu, the name of the father of the Pāṇḍavas, but to Pāṇḍu, which was the name of a Kṣatṛiya tribe as well as a country. Evidently Pāṇḍya denotes the descendants of the Pāṇḍu tribe, and must have been so called when they migrated southwards and established themselves there." (P. 10). But who were these Pāṇḍus? We do not find their name mentioned in the R̥gveda, though the word *Paṇi* occurs frequently. The consonant *ṇ* is pronounced as *ṇḍ*, and the correct pronunciation of *Paṇi* would be *Paṇḍi*. Had this word any connection with Pāṇḍu? I have reasons to think, it had. The Paṇis lived on the eastern sea-shores of Sapta-Sindhu, on the high banks of the Gangā, and probably also of the Yamunā. Many left Sapta-Sindhu after the bed of the Rajputana Sea had been upheaved, and settled on the Malabar coast, and these Paṇis or Paṇḍis were probably the ancestors of the Pāṇḍyas who, however, represented a mixed race of Aryans and Dravidians, and developed a civilisation which was afterwards taken to Egypt. (*Vide* Chapters XII & XIII).

CHAPTER VII.

THE ARYAN TRIBES OF SAPTA-SINDHU AND THE DA'ŒAS AND THE DASYUS OF THE RĠVEDA,

We will now revert to a further account of ancient Sapta-Sindhu, and describe the people that inhabited in Rġvedic times. Sapta-Sindhu, as we have already seen, was the original home of the ancient Aryans who lived there, divided into tribes or clans in accordance with their religious beliefs and different grades of development. Some of them had a homogeneous development in religious thoughts and sentiments; and they were like one people,—though living in separate kingdoms under the rule of separate kings, yet practising the same religious rites and ceremonies, worshipping the same Gods, observing the same social customs, and speaking the same language. These tribes were the *Pañcajanās* and the *Pañcakṛtīs* of the Rġveda. What the names of these tribes exactly were, it is difficult to ascertain; but from the frequent mention of the *Anus*, the *Druhyus*, the *Yadus*, the *Turbāṣas*, the *Tṛtsus*, the *Purus* and the *Bharatas*, it may be surmised that a combination of these represented the five principal tribes, known as *Pañcajanās*, with a homogeneous development in civilisation. For example, the *Yadus* and the *Turbāṣas* were regarded as one tribe like the *Tṛtsus* and the *Bharatas*. There were many other Aryan tribes in Sapta-Sindhu, not holding the same religious views, or observing the same social customs as the Five Tribes who, therefore, hated them and kept themselves as much aloof from their contact as possible. The Five Tribes were fond of performing the Soma sacrifice, and prided themselves on their designation of sacrificers. The sacrifices were mainly performed in honour of Indra who shared the offerings with the other principal Devas whom the five Aryan tribes worshipped. Those Aryan tribes who

did not perform the Soma sacrifice, or believe in the supremacy or even the existence of Indra, were put down as non-sacrificers, Dásas, Dasyus, and unworthy of even being called *men*. To quote Ragozin again: "To an Aryan Hindu, the man who owned the Soma and did not press it was a hopeless reprobate. In fact, he divided mankind into 'pressers,' and 'not pressers,' the latter word being synonymous with 'enemy' and 'godless barbarians'"¹ This undoubtedly bespeaks a degree of religious intolerance among the ancient Aryans, which would not ordinarily be suspected. We shall see later on to what lamentable lengths it went in ancient Aryan society.

To understand clearly why in a country inhabited by the same race and family of human beings from the very earliest times, there are diversity of culture and different grades in the development of social and religious institutions, it will be necessary for us to refer briefly to the different stages through which man had to pass in all lands and climes in his onward march towards progress. It is an established fact that primitive man was at first a nomad, never confining himself to one place, but roaming about in quest of food, only settling or rather hanging about for sometime in places that afforded him sufficient edibles and shelter, and abandoning that place again in search of "fresh fields and pastures new." He was also by nature a vegetarian, and not a carnivorous animal, as is sometimes wrongly supposed. It was only when fruits and edible herbs were not found in abundance that he had recourse to the flesh of animals, birds and insects, which he had to kill for his support with rude weapons of stones or bones. A particular habit, contracted through force of circumstances, tended to persist and continue, even though the circumstances that had produced it no longer existed. Thus, a primitive man who once contracted the habit of subsisting on flesh would not easily give it up, even if fruits and herbs that would maintain his life were found in abundance.

¹ *Vedic India* p. 171.

But animals and birds, whose flesh was used as food, were not always available; and the second stage of the primitive man's development was marked by his desire to secure them alive, and stock them against future wants.¹ This necessity for keeping livestock gradually developed in him the art of taming and domesticating wild animals. Some animals were more easily tamed and domesticated than others, as for instance, the goat, the sheep, and cattle; and these were the first to be tamed. Thus, the primitive hunter gradually developed into the primitive cattle-keeper or herdsman. Cattle or *paśu* now became veritable wealth to him, and the possessor or owner thereof was considered rich or well-to-do, as their possession put him above want. The milk of cattle was found nutritious, and as the animals multiplied every year, some of them could also be slaughtered for food in times of necessity, without the number of heads being diminished to any appreciable extent. But the possession of cattle imposed upon him the duty of pasturing them; and so, he had to take them out to places that afforded them good grazing and supplied them with abundant water. Thus, the nomadic hunter still remained the nomadic cattle-keeper.

In course of time, however, wild corn was discovered and it was found by observation that by cultivation, the seed

¹ It is related in the *Taittirīya Samhitā* (vii 1. 1. 4-6) that Prajāpati or the Creator first created Brāhmaṇas among men and goats among brutes from his mouth; then he created Rājanyas among men and sheep among brutes from his chest and arms; afterwards, he created Vaiśyas among men and cows among brutes from his belly, and lastly he created Śūdras among men and horses among brutes. The order in which the goat, the sheep, the cow and the horse are said to have been created shows the order in which these animals were domesticated by the primitive Aryans in long and gradual course of time. It is curious that though the cow is held sacred and classed with Brāhmaṇas in the later religious literature of the Hindus, the goat has been given precedence in the *Samhitā*, and coupled with the Brāhmaṇas; but the above description probably represents the true order in which these animals were domesticated and brought to the use of the primitive Aryans, or for the matter of that, of primitive men.

improved in quality and the corn in quantity, and accordingly cultivation was resorted to by some of the nomads, who however had soon to give up or modify their nomadic life, in as much as the corn, as long as it remained in the fields, required to be carefully tended and protected from the attack of birds and beasts, or worse still, human pilferers. After the crops were harvested, they had to be thrashed out from the sheaves, the grains winnowed, and the surplus product stored for future use. The necessity for performing all these duties naturally curbed their nomadic propensities, and induced them to settle permanently near their corn-fields. The cattle, however, were important and indispensable adjuncts to agriculture, as it was with the help of oxen that the fields were ploughed, and the corn harvested home. Though the stalks or straws supplied them with nutritious fodder, they still required to be pastured and were actually taken out, during a part of the year, to rich pastures, far or near. But there was a large number of tribes who still remained in the hunting stage of their development and lived by the chase, and there were others who were nomads, and roamed about with their cattle and families from place to place, and these people naturally felt tempted to steal the cattle of the settled population and actually stole and drove them away.

The settled and agricultural Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu had passed through all these stages of development when the R̥gvedic hymns began to be composed; but there were still in that land those of the race, who remained in the primitive stage of hunters, or in the nomadic stage of cattle-keepers, lagging far behind in the race of life, and unable to keep pace with their more advanced brethren. They constituted the very dregs of society—the pests and curse of the country—and were called by the hateful names of *Dāsas* and *Dasyas*, i.e., slaves and robbers. The robbers were notorious cattle-lifters, who generally lived in the deep recesses of the forests, beyond the reach of civilised men, or in inaccessible mountain

fastnesses, secure against attacks, and under cover of darkness, suddenly descended upon the peaceful agricultural population and carried away their cattle and goods, just as some of their descendants, the restless tribes on the North-Western frontier of India do even to the present day. The savage hunters mainly subsisted on flesh and killed the stolen animals for food, whose flesh they ate raw, or partially roasted or boiled; and hence they were called *raw meat-eaters* and *Rākṣasas*, i.e., persons from whom self-protection, was necessary. Our readers need not be surprised at the practice of eating raw-meat, that prevailed among the savage Aryans of ancient Sapta-Sindhu, for even in modern times, the Baluchis, in whose veins still courses Aryan blood, are known to be fond of raw-meat.¹ The nomads in Sapta-Sindhu, like the present nomadic *Iranis* or *Iranians* who, by the way, are the surviving remnants of the ancient nomadic Aryans, were also petty traders who pitched their tents with their cattle, horses and dogs near civilised Aryan settlements, and bartered articles of trade for grains, gold, cattle or other articles of indigenous product. Though posing as honest traders by day, they waited for an opportunity to steal the cattle of the villagers at night, which they usually did, and mingling them with their own herds, swiftly moved away to other places beyond the reach of the outraged inhabitants. Sometimes, they were hotly pursued, and a free fight ensued between them and the villagers. As inhabitants of Sapta-Sindhu, they as well as the hunting savages were well acquainted with the use of iron weapons, though they were unable to manufacture them, and were as well armed for offensive purposes as the settled Aryans. These gangs were led by powerful chiefs and many were the pitched battles that the settled Aryans fought with them. Occasionally, they proved such intolerable pests and so powerful that the chiefs or kings of the settled Aryans who, by the way, called

¹ Vide account of the Baluchis in the *Ency. Brit.*

themselves *Kṛṣṭayah* or agriculturists, and *Viśah*, i.e., "settlers" (Weber), had to organize armed expeditions with a view to clear them out of their territories and punish them, and thereby to assure their subjects of peaceful protection.

As the hunters and the nomads roamed about the country without any fixed habitations, and were exposed to the inclemencies of all the weathers, they were naturally dark-complexioned, and not possessing the pure white complexion of the settled Aryans, were called by them "blacks" or "blackies," not only in a literal, but also in a figurative sense to depect the blackness of their hearts. The frequent mention of "black-skinned" Dāsas and Dasyus in the Ṛgveda does not refer, as is wrongly supposed, to the existence of black-skinned non-Aryans of the Dravidian or Kolarian stocks in Sapta-Sindhu—for they were entirely cut off from this land by the Southern and the Eastern Seas—but to these Aryan pests who, on account of their savage state and want of culture, were a disgrace to the race, and called "blacks," just as an Englishmen would call an English robber or swindler a "black-guard." And this is the interpretation that some Western Sanskrit scholars feel disposed to put on the words "black" and "black-skinned." In this connection, it may be stated here that there is a notable instance of the use of the epithet "black" applied to the Vedic Aryans themselves by their enemies, the Iranians or Persians, who were also a branch of the Aryan race. In the *Gāthā Ustavaiti*, Zarathustra says: "12. That I will ask Thee, tell me it right, Thou living God, who is the religious man, and who the impious, after whom I wish to enquire. With whom of both is the *black spirit*, and with whom the bright one? Is it not right to consider the implous man who attacks me or Thee, to be a *black* one?"¹ It would thus appear that a branch of the Aryan race, who were inimical to another, on account of difference of religious opinions, called the latter

¹ Dr. Haug's "Essay on the Sacred Language, Writings and Religion of the Parsees" Ed. 1862 p. 151.

"blacks," although they were admittedly a white people. We need not, therefore, at all wonder that the Ṛgvedic Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu called the dregs of their society "blacks," not only for their dark complexion but also for their dark life and character.

The analogy of the "black skin" was possibly drawn by the Ṛgvedic Aryans from the colour of the cloud which was regarded as the body of the demon, Vṛtra, who also tormented the Aryans by captivating life-giving rains within its compass, and was compared, along with his hosts, to the Dāsas and Dasyus of Sapta-Sindhu, who stole the milk-giving cows of the settled Aryans. Hence, Vṛtra and his hosts were also designated by the names of *Dāsas* and *Dasyus* after the Aryan robbers and hunting savages. The rain-clouds, by a further stretch of analogy, were compared to milch-cows, the rumblings of the thunder to their lowings, and their ruddy, black and white colours to those of the cows. In all these descriptions and similes, we find the fact of the stealing of cows by the Dāsas and the Dasyus from the settled Aryans uppermost in the mind of the Vedic bards, as this caused them very great anxiety, and oppressed their minds with sad and vindictive thoughts.

After a careful analysis of the use of the word "Dasyu" in the Ṛgveda, Muir came to the following conclusion: "I have gone over the names of the Dasyus or Asuras, mentioned in the Ṛgveda, with the view of discovering whether any of them could be regarded as of non-Aryan or indigenous origin; but I have not observed any that appear to be of this character." ¹ Professor Roth also says in his *Lexicon*: "It is but seldom, if at all, that the explanation of Dasyu as referring to the non-Aryans, the barbarians, is advisable." Muir clearly says that none of the names of the Dasyus were of non-Aryan or *indigenous* origin. By the word "indigenous" he probably meant "aboriginal," as the black-skinned

¹ Muir's *Original Sanskrit Text*, vol. II, p. 387 Ed. 1871.

Dravidians and Kolarians were supposed to have been the original inhabitants of the Punjab, whom the Aryan invaders are said to have ousted from occupation and driven to the south. The Aryans not having been regarded as indigenous, the names of the Dasyus also were necessarily not regarded as "indigenous" by Muir. But in the light of the results of our present investigation, we should call these names indigenous, though certainly Aryan, because the Dāsas and the Dasyus formed the lowest dregs of Aryan society, and were as much autochthones in Sapta-Sindhu as the cultured Aryans themselves. They were merely the remnants of the very early stages of Aryan development, probably the dross and by-products of the race in the gradually purifying process of their evolution,—the laggards that could not accommodate their pace to that of their most advanced brethren, and were thus left far behind in the race, revelling in their primitive savage condition, as a distinct community, having very little in common with the cultured Aryans, excepting blood and language which again was not the pure language as spoken by the cultured class, but a jargon, called *Mleccha*, or corruption of Vedic Sanskrit.

These Dāsas and Dasyus were also called *Asuras* and *Rākṣasas*. The word *Asura* literally means "powerful" and was at first used as an epithet of the Devas to denote their superhuman beneficent powers. But this meaning gradually degenerated, and the word came to denote all that was evil. The etymological meaning of the word, *Rākṣasa*, according to the great Vedic commentator, Yāska, is "one from whom protection is necessary"; and so, the word originally meant a formidable man capable of inflicting evil. Afterwards, the word came to mean a demon, or monster with three or more heads, destroying human life by means, visible or invisible, in fact, a supernatural evil being, or a *latus naturæ*. But the epithet, *Rākṣasa*, applied to the Dāsas and the Dasyus, had undoubtedly its etymological significance in the Ṛgveda, and meant persons "from whom

protection was necessary." For, they were the very pests of Aryan society, looting, pillaging, and plundering the Aryan villages in well-organized powerful bands, disturbing the peaceful occupations of the inhabitants, and retarding their progress. They were like the grim shadows of a past life of grossness and barbarism, that haunted and tormented the advanced Aryans, and made their very existence miserable and unbearable. These evil shadows had to be got rid of, and purged from their society and country anyhow, before they could think of working out their own evolution. And it appears from a study of the Vedic hymns that the cultured section of the people applied themselves to the task of either annihilating or extirpating them from the country with a grim determination. A very large number of the R̥gvedic hymns breathe this spirit of determination. They were well cognisant of the powers of the great Indra who vanquished Vṛtra and his hosts, the supernatural foes of mankind, and they invoked his aid in hymn after hymn in this their great and difficult task. The mighty Indra seemed to listen to their prayers, and slaughtered their enemies like beasts in the fields of battle, hunted them out from their mountain fastnesses and scattered them like wind, burned them out from the forests, and after destroying their haunts and nests, butchered them mercilessly. It was, indeed, an awful, bloody, and protracted struggle in which the Aryans were engaged. It is sad to reflect that the advanced Aryans did not think of reclaiming them from barbarism by more humanizing and peaceful methods; but probably in the circumstances in which they were placed, it was not possible for them to do so. They thought slaughter or extirpation to be the only means of getting rid of them, and we find the Vedic bards gloating and exulting over the slaughter, offering hymns and Soma libations to Indra for their victories, quaffing the Soma drink in excess to the point of intoxication to celebrate their success, and feeling a cruel satisfaction at the terrible execution made by them. The whole country was up in arms against the

marauding Dasyus—men, women and children;—even *Ṛṣi* took up arms and fought against the Dasyus, and a lady named Mudgalāni, the wife of a *Ṛṣi* of the name of Mudgala, drove the car for her husband in pursuit of the robbers, took up his bow and arrows, fought, and won back her husband's stolen cows. The Vedic bard has described this heroic feat in glowing language, and with a pride that he justly felt in the glorious achievements of this virago. (Rv. x. 102). The incident shows the high degree of excitement to which the whole country was roused against the Dasyus, and the pitch of indignation generally felt against them. The result of this united, determined and persistent effort was the extirpation, dispersion, or destruction of the Dasyus. Many fled from the country, dispersed themselves beyond the precincts of Sapta-Sindhu westward, and were scattered over Western Asia, and thence over Europe. Those that remained were subdued, and reclaimed into Aryan society by some *Ṛṣis* and kings who possessed the milk of human kindness in a larger quantity and were more catholic than their *confrères*.

Let us describe here some of the brave feats that Indra, or more correctly speaking, his worshippers, performed in this connection :

"I (Indra) have killed Atka with my thunderbolt for the good of the man, known as Kavi. I have protected Kutsa by adopting various means of protection. I took up the thunderbolt for killing Śuṣṇa. *I have deprived the Dasyus of their appellation of Ārya.*

"Kutsa hankered after the territory known by the name of Vetasu. I brought it under his sway, as I had done in the case of his father, and Tugra and Smadiva became his vassals. It is through my favour that the sacrificer prospers. I give him coveted objects, as to my own son ; and thus he becomes invincible.

"I am that Indra who, as Vṛtrahan, killed Vṛtra, and have broken the two persons known by the names of Nava-vāstva

and Br̥hadratha (lit. New settler, and Possessor of a big chariot). These two foes had become very powerful; but I pursued them, and drove them out of this sunlit globe.

"My two fleet horses carry me, and riding on them, I travel round the Sun. When men prepare the Soma juice, and invoke me to purify it, I cut down the *Dāsa* into twain. For, he has been born for that fate.

"I have destroyed the seven strongholds of the enemy. However great a capturer may be, there is none greater than myself. I have strengthened Yadu and Turbaś, and made them famous. I have strengthened others also and destroyed ninety-nine towns." (Rv. x. 49).

From the above extracts, it would appear that the Dasyus were Aryan tribes, and bore the name of *Ārya*, of which, however, they were deprived by Indra. It would also appear that the name *Dāsa* was applied to those who were not sacrificers.

In Rv. ix. 73,5, it has been said that Indra cannot bear the sight of the black skin, and he expelled "the black skin," both from heaven and earth. The "black skin" has probably a double meaning here, as we have already said, *vis.*, the black cloud (the body of *Vṛtra*) which he dispersed from the sky, and the dark-complexioned sun-burnt Aryan Dasyus whom he expelled from the earth. Or, it may simply mean that Indra drives away the black-clouds that are formed high up in the sky, and the dark mists that are formed below, near the earth.

The term *Ārya* was appropriated by the settled agriculturists of Sapta-Sindhu, who performed the sacrifices, and were a cultured people, as distinguished from the uncultured nomads and hunters who roamed about the country, plundering and pillaging the Aryan villages, and did not perform any sacrifice at all. Yāska has explained the word in the *Nirukta* by the synonym *Īśvaraputra* or "son of God." Sāyana, the great commentator of the Ṛgveda, has interpreted it to mean

"the person who should be approached by all persons for knowledge and enlightenment," (Rv. i. 130, 4), and also "the person who is learned and performs the sacrifices." (Rv. i. 51, 8). He also identifies the Ārya with all persons belonging to the first three twice-born castes of Aryan society.

We have already said that the sun-burnt dark-complexioned hunters and nomadic Dasyus were called "black-skinned" from an analogy drawn from the colour of the black clouds which Indra dispersed in his fight with Vṛtra. In Rv. i. 101, 1, Indra has been described as having killed the pregnant wives of Kṛṣṇa. By the word "wives" are meant the rain-laden black clouds. In Rv. ii. 20, 7, reference has been made to Vṛtrahan (or Indra) having destroyed the army of *black origin* (*kṛṣṇa yonih*) and created rain for Manu. This black army was undoubtedly the black hosts, or clouds of Vṛtra. But in Rv. iv. 16, 13, it has been said that Indra killed fifty thousand black foes. In Rv. vii. 5, 3, Vaiśvānara or Fire has been described to have pierced the citadel of the enemy, when the black people came out pell-mell, through consternation and distress, leaving their dinner unfinished; and in verse 6 of the same Śukta, Agni is said to have driven out the Dasyus from their hiding places, by burning and blazing fiercely. The black people, referred to in these verses, were undoubtedly the sun-burnt Aryan Dasyus who lived in the deep recesses of the forests for self-protection, but who were afterwards expelled in consequence of the forests being set on fire. There was also a Dasyu chief, named Kṛṣṇa (the Black), who lived on the banks of the *Amśumati* or the *Yamunā*, and had ten thousand followers with whose help he harassed the settled Aryans (Rv. viii. 96, 13-15).

Though these Dasyus were called black from their complexion and character, they were similar in appearance to the Aryans, and it was difficult to distinguish a Dasyu from an Aryan. Hence the Vedic bard invokes Indra to know and

distinguish the Aryans from the *Dasyus* who were opposed to the performance of sacrifices (Rv. i. 5,8). Muir has translated the verse thus: "Distinguish between the *Âryas* and those who are *Dasyus*, and chastising those who observe no sacred rites, subject them to the sacrificers. Be strong supporter of him who sacrifices." In Rv. x. 86,19 Indra says: "I come looking about me, and seeking the *Dāsas* and the *Âryas*. I drink the Soma juice from those who prepare it and cook offerings for sacrifice in my honour. I am ascertaining who among these is endowed with good sense." Thus it is clear that the *Dāsas* and the *Ârya* were so alike in appearance that Indra had difficulty in distinguishing the one from the other, and he knew only the *Ârya* by seeing him prepare the Soma juice and cook the offerings for sacrifice.

It would also appear that the word *Dasyu* was applied to the numerous gangs of Aryan robbers, and the word *Dāsa* to those Aryans who were not sacrificers and did not observe the religious rites of the Vedic Aryans. These *Dāsas* were not necessarily nomads, and for aught we know, were the settled inhabitants of the country, living on the products of agriculture like the sacrifice-loving *Âryas*. But as they were not sacrificers and had their own modes of worship, they, like the *Dasyus*, incurred the odium and displeasure of the *Âryas* who sacrificed,—which furnishes another instance of religious intolerance prevailing in ancient *Sapta-Sindhu*. The following references will illustrate our meaning:

In Rv. i. 51, 9, it has been stated that Indra brings those who do not sacrifice under the subjection of those who do. In Rv. i. 51,5, the Vedic bard says that Indra defeated those who, instead of offering sacrificial food to the Gods, themselves swallowed them; and in Rv. v. 42,9, *Brahmanaspati* has been invoked to reduce the wealth of those who seek pleasure for their own sake, but who do not please the Gods by chanting hymns, and to deprive them of the sun-light, and cast them into dismal darkness (though they may have

children) for the sin of detracting from the efficacy of the *mantras*. In Rv. i. 33,5, Indra has been praised for compelling those to turn their backs, who do not perform sacrifices and are opposed to their performance. In Rv. ii. 22,4, Indra is praised for defeating "all that is godless" (*Adevam*), and in Rv. iii. 31, 19, he has been invoked to kill all godless persecutors of mankind. In Rv. i. 174, 8, Indra has been praised for having destroyed the towns of the godless foes, and bent, *i.e.* broken their weapons. In Rv. i. 100, 18, Indra is said to have destroyed the Dasyus and the Simyus (demons), and divided and shared their lands with his *white* friends, meaning the Ārya worshippers. In verse 4 of the same Sūkta, it has been said that Indra deprived the *Dasyus* of all good parts, and made the *Dāsas* infamous. In Rv. x. 22,8 the Ṛṣi says: "We live in the midst of the Dasyu tribes who do not perform sacrifices, nor believe in anything. They have their own rites, and are not entitled to be called 'men.' O Thou Destroyer of enemies, annihilate them and injure the *Dāsas*." This is another instance of religious bigotry and intolerance we come across in the Ṛgveda. In Rv. vi. 47, 20 a Ṛṣi when out on a search for his lost cattle, thus describes the land infested by the Dasyus: "Ye Devas, in the course of our wanderings, we have reached a place where there is no trace of cows. The wide tract gives shelter to the Dasyus. O Bṛhaspati, guide us in our search for the cows. O Indra, lead thy worshipper on the right track, who has lost his way."

It would thus appear that the Dasyus lived in secluded spots far from the agricultural settlements of the Aryans, and performed their peculiar rites which were regarded as dark and wicked by the cultured Āryas; and as they did not believe in the existence of the Aryan Gods, they incurred the hatred of their advanced neighbours.

That the very existence of Indra was doubted by even some of the cultured Aryans would appear from the following quotations: "Ye men, believe in that dreaded Deva whose

name is Indra, about whom people ask 'where is he?' and assert that he does not exist." (Rv. ii. 12,5). "Ye warriors, if it is true that Indra exists, then offer libations of Soma to him, with true hymns. The Ṛṣi who is called Nema says: 'There is no Deva of the name of Indra. Who has seen him? Whom shall we offer our hymns to?'" (Rv. viii. 100,3).

It is thus clear that there were dissenters from the orthodox faith even in cultured Aryan society; and we can easily imagine the extent of ill-feeling that existed between these free-thinkers and the orthodox Aryans, which afterwards led to a protracted sanguinary warfare resulting in the ultimate expulsion of the dissenters from Sapta-Sindhu. These dissenters were called the Ārya enemies, *i.e.*, enemies belonging to the *cultured* Aryan classes, as distinguished from the Dāsas and the Dasyus who mostly belonged to the *uncultured* classes of the race, and remained in the primitive condition of their development. I will quote the translations of a few hymns to show the attitude of the orthodox Aryans towards the cultured dissenters:

"O Indra, those who have been separated from us, and do not come in contact with us, are not thine, because of their want of faith in thee" (Rv. v. 33, 3).

"O Indra, thou instantly killed *Ārya* Arṇa and Citraratha, on the other side of the Sarayu" ¹ (Rv. iv. 30, 18).

"O Indra, thou who art praised by many people, dost ordain that our godless enemies, whether belonging to the Aryan clans, or the Dāsas, are easily discomfited by us, when they come to fight with us" (Rv. x. 38, 3).

"O Manyu (Anger), help us so that we may successfully fight our enemies, whether belonging to the *Ārya* clans or those of the *Dāsas*." (Rv. x. 83, 1.)

¹ Sarayu was a river either in Sapta-Sindhu or Arachosia, and not the river of that name in Kosala.

"O thou valiant Maghavan, be exhilarated by this Soma drink, and destroy all our opposing enemies, whether they be our own kith and kin, or not. (Rv. vi. 44, 19).

"May that kinsman of ours, who is not pleased with us, and wishes our annihilation from a distance, be destroyed by all the Devas." (Rv. vi. 75, 19.)

From the above extracts, it would appear that ancient Aryan society in Sapta-Sindhu, as depicted in the R̥gveda, was not an ideal peaceful society to live in. It was cut up into numerous tribes and factions in the different stages of development and culture, warring with one another, the more advanced tribes the *Pañrajanas*, combining against the *Dāsas*, the *Dasyus*, and the seceders from the orthodox faith, and trying to extirpate them with the object of creating an altogether new and peaceful atmosphere in the country, conducive to their mental, moral and spiritual growth and development, according to their own standard of excellence. In this they were eminently successful in the long run, the discordant elements having been purged out of the country. The nomads and the hunting savages, belonging to the Aryan family, were driven out of the land, and some of them took refuge in the hills and forests of the western and north-western frontiers, as there was no land either eastwards or southwards, where they could migrate; while others passed out of the country through the north-western gates into Western Asia, and a wider world beyond, where they found ample space for living and hunting, and freely mixed with the native populations, and gave them their language and culture, such as they possessed. This story of the Aryan expansion will be told in subsequent chapters; but it will suffice here to state that these Aryan savages left Sapta-Sindhu in R̥gvedic times, and a sect of the cultured Aryans who seceded from the orthodox faith and were subsequently known in history as the *Iranians* or *Parsis*, was compelled to leave Sapta-Sindhu after a protracted sanguinary war, known in later

Vedic literature and the Purāṇas as the *Devāsura-Saṃgrāma*, or war between the Devās and the Asuras, which will be dealt with later on.

We have already given a short account of the Pāṇis, an Aryan tribe, who were the merchants *par excellence* in ancient Sapta-Sindhu, and traded not only in the country, but also by land and sea in other countries as well. They were, however, not the votaries of Indra, but of Vāia. While trading in the interior, they were in the habit of deceiving the simple villagers, and sometimes stole their cows and ran away to places of safety, beyond their reach. There is a story of cattle-lifting mentioned in Śukta 108 of the Tenth Maṇḍala of the R̥gveda, in which the Pāṇis were concerned. Saramā (literally, the mother of dogs) was sent by Indra to track them, which she succeeded in doing; but she failed to induce the Pāṇis to come back or return the stolen cows. Whatever astronomical, cosmological or meteorological interpretations may be put on the conversation held between Saramā and the Pāṇis, one fact stands out above others, and that is their stealing of cows from the settled Aryans, which involved a good deal of search, and caused not a little worry and anxiety to the owners thereof. The Pāṇis have been described in Rv. vi. 51, 14 as "greedy like the wolf," in Rv. vi. 61, 1 as "extremely selfish" and "niggardly" and in Rv. vi. 20, 4 as "non-sacrificing, voluble, of cruel and unkind speech, devoid of reverential sentiments, and not multiplying." In Rv. vi. 20, 4, it is said that they once gave battle to King Kutsa, but were defeated by him, and they fled away, with hundreds of followers, in fright and disorder.

They were a small community—these Pāṇis,—but rich, adventurous, cruel, selfish, extorting, usurious, and trading on the gullibility of the poor simple villagers, like the Jews of modern times; and thus they came to be regarded as veritable pests of the country. Not subscribing to the orthodox Aryan faith, they were hated and persecuted by the Vedic Aryans,

and at last driven out of the country. As I have already said, they were the ancestors of the Phœnicians of classical history and what is known as the Punic race, and spread over Western Asia, Northern Africa, and the islands of the Greek Archipelago. But some of them that stayed in the country were gradually converted to the orthodox faith, and became incorporated in the cultured Aryan community. They probably lived, as I have already said, on the eastern coast-lines of Sapta-Sindhu and on the high banks of the Gangā, as the following quotation will show:—"Bṛbu was placed high among the Panis, like the lofty banks of the Gangā" (Rv. vi. 45, 31). It is related that he once helped hungry Bharadvāja, a Ṛṣi, who had been benighted in the woods, and had lost his way. The Vedic bard thus praises Bṛbu in Rv. vi. 45, 33:—"We always praise Bṛbu with songs, who gave us one thousand cows, is wise, and deserves to be sung in hymns." This shows that a compromise was effected between such of the Panis as were left in the country, and the leaders of the cultured Aryan community. Bṛbu was a great builder, probably of ships, and has been called *Tvaṣṭ* or master-carpenter, or master-builder.

The *Yadus* were an Aryan tribe living in Sapta-Sindhu, but very probably they had at first been seceders from the orthodox faith, and had gone across the Southern Sea (the Rajputana Sea) and settled somewhere on its farther shores, possibly in modern Gujarat. They were, however, brought back by Indra to Sapta-Sindhu, where they re-settled, and performed many sacrifices on the banks of the Sarasvatī. As they had been heterodox in their faith, they were described in Rv. x. 62, 10 as kings belonging to the *Dāsa* tribe, or unbelievers.

The *Sanakas* were also an Aryan tribe. Even to this day, when oblations are offered to the manes of the original six *men* (*manuṣyas*) who were probably distinguished at the beginning of Aryan society, the name of Sanaka is mentioned first.

But the descendants of Sanaka became opposed to the institution of sacrifice, and the Ṛgveda mentions how they were killed by Indra :—

“ The Sanakas who were opposed to the institution of sacrifice met with death, (O Indra), coming as they did to be killed by arrows shot from thy bow.” (Rv. i. 33, 4.)

That there were many Aryan clans in Sapta-Sindhu who did not worship the Aryan Gods would appear from the following quotation : “ Ye men, that God is Indra who killed with his thunderbolt many sinful non-worshippers. He does not bestow success on the proud and is the destroyer of the Dasyus.” (Rv. ii. 12, 10.)

The *Purus* have been mentioned in the Ṛgveda (x. 48, 5) as also the *Cedis* (Rv. viii. 5, 17. 38-39). The famous King Puru-Kutsa whose praise has been sung in many a hymn was probably a most distinguished leader of the former. The *Cedis*, however, do not appear to have figured much in Ṛgvedic history.

Mention has already been made of the descendants of the fifty sons of Viśvāmitra, who were cursed to be the progenitors of the lowest orders of mankind, *viz.*, the Andhras, the Pundras, the Śabarās, the Pulindas, and the Mutibhas who were ranked among the Dasyus. As the curse is mentioned in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, and not in the Ṛgveda, we may take it that long after Ṛgvedic times, the descendants of Viśvāmitra freely mixed with the aboriginal tribes of Southern India, and became their leaders, just as the descendants of Agastya crossed the Vindhya, settled in Southern India, and spread light and culture among its dark denizens.

But even in the Ṛgveda, we come across instances of the advanced and cultured Aryans becoming the leaders of the dark-complexioned Aryan Dasyus. *Trasa-dasyu* (lit. one who frightens the Dasyus) was an Aryan king, son of Puru-Kutsa, and famous for his charities and gifts. In Rv. viii.

19, 37, he has been described as the leader of the "dark-complexioned men." Very likely, after subduing the Dasyus, he reclaimed them from their evil ways and became their leader. Here, then, is an instance of a benevolent, powerful, and noble Aryan Prince engaged in the sacred task of uplifting the low and degraded.

We thus find that the Dāsas, the Dasyus, the Asuras and the Rākṣasas were all Aryan tribes living in Sapta-Sindhu from the earliest times, but mostly belonging to the low and degraded classes in the primitive stages of development, who did not worship the Gods of the cultured classes, nor perform the sacrifices, and were, therefore, hated by them. They proved such pests by their evil and wicked ways, unclean habits, and criminal propensities that a systematic organization was made to extirpate and expel them from Sapta-Sindhu. After a guerilla warfare continued for a long time, they were either killed, subdued, or driven out. But those that remained adopted civilised manners, became converts to the Aryan faith and were incorporated in Aryan society not as equals but inferiors, occupying the lowest place and forming probably the majority of the Śūdra caste.¹ What became of those who had been expelled from the country, it would be our endeavour to ascertain in the next chapter.

¹ Mr. Nesfield in his *Brief View of the Caste System of the North-Western Provinces and Oudh* says that there is no such division of the people as the Aryan conquerors of India and the aborigines of the country, that this division is "modern" and that there is "essential unity of the Indian race." He further says that the great majority of Brahmans are not of lighter complexion or of finer or better bred features than any other caste, "or "distinct in race and blood from the scavengers who swept the road." (*Vide Pāṅge's Aryavartik Home*, p. 271.)

CHAPTER VIII.

THE DISPERSION OF THE EARLY BARBAROUS ARYAN TRIBES FROM SAPTA-SINDHU.

The Ṛgveda Saṃhitā, as we have already said, is merely a collection of hymns which were composed not in any particular period, but in different periods, separated from one another probably by thousands of years. There are innumerable references in the Ṛgveda to older hymns which came down to the bards of the Ṛgveda, clothed in new language (Rv. vi. 22, 7), and to their great ancient ancestors, for instance, Manu, the Angirases, the Atharvans and the Bhṛguṣ who were the first to light the Sacrificial Fire, and inaugurate the institution of Sacrifice (Rv. x. 46, 2; 92, 10). It is said that the sage, Atharvan, was the first to produce Fire (Rv. x. 21, 5), and the Angirases the first to organize Fire-worship. The Vasiṣṭhas and the Agnisatvas have also been mentioned among the *Pitṛs* or ancestors (Rv. x. 15, 8 & 11). A time is referred to when the *Maruts*, i.e., the presiding deities of the winds and the *Rbhus* were *men*, who were afterwards transformed into *Devas* on account of their piety and good work. (Rv. x. 77, 2). The *old* and the *new* feats of Indra have also been referred to (Rv. v. 31, 6), and the ancient ancestors, the Navagva Saptarṣis (the Seven Ṛṣis) mentioned. (Rv. vi. 22.3.) The famous Ṛṣi Bharadvāja says in a hymn: “(O Indra), the performer of many feats, those (Ṛṣis) who flourished in the *early age* became thy friends by performing the sacrifices as at present. Those that flourished in the *medieval age* and those that have flourished in *recent times* have similarly earned thy friendship. Therefore, (O Indra), worshipped as thou art by many, condescend to listen to this hymn, offered by thy (present) humble (adorer)” (Rv. vi. 21, 5). The three ages into which the Ṛgvedic period was divided, *viz.*, the Early, the

Mediæval and the Recent (or Later) have also been mentioned in Rv. lil. 32, 13. The "ancient" and the "modern" R̥ṣis have moreover been mentioned in Rv. vii. 22, 9 and the ancient R̥ṣis described as the benefactors of mankind. (Rv. vil. 29, 3.)

Thus it will be seen that the R̥gveda which is regarded as the oldest work extant of the Aryan race refers to still older times when Fire was first produced, the sacrifices first introduced, and hymns first offered to the Gods, and gives us faint glimpses of things whose origin is shrouded in the impenetrable darkness of the past, and will probably never stand revealed.

In the last chapter, I have already briefly referred to the stages through which the cultured Aryan had passed before he reached the stage of civilisation in which we find him in R̥gvedic times. He had been the primitive hunter with his stone weapons, living on the spoils of the chase, and must have passed through the palæolithic and the neolithic stages before he emerged into a comparatively civilised stage. There is no direct reference to stone weapons in the R̥gveda, excepting Indra's *vajra*, though horn-tipped arrows also are mentioned; and the palæolithic or the neolithic Aryan savage must have been completely superseded by the Aryan hunter and nomad, possessing iron weapons, as the latter was superseded by the more civilised Aryan agriculturist who settled down in village-life in the fertile alluvial plains of Sapta-Sindhu. The Aryan later palæolithic or neolithic savages, pressed by the more advanced tribes, must have withdrawn into inaccessible parts where they secluded themselves beyond the reach of other tribes, just as the Juangs of Orissa, and the Puliers and the Mundavers of Southern India have kept themselves aloof, even to this day, from the contact of the more advanced tribes of their race,—content to remain for long untold ages in the primitive stone stage of their development, and not knowing the use and even the

names of metals. Still further pressed by the more advanced tribes, they were at last compelled to leave the land that gave them birth, and to disperse into countries beyond the precincts of Sapta-Sindhu, which no longer afforded them sufficient security and protection, nor proved congenial to their mode of life. They could not disperse eastwards or southwards on account of the existence of impassable seas, nor northwards into Central Asia for the very same reason. The only direction in which they could and did disperse was westward, through Baluchistan, Afghanistan and Persia along the southern coasts of the Central Asian Sea. Here, probably, they came in contact with the nomadic savages of the Mongolian race, who also pressed westwards along the southern coasts of the same sea in search of "fresh fields" for hunting, and "pastures new" for their cattle, if they possessed any. It can be safely surmised that, as the more civilised Chinese occupied the eastern portions of Asia, the hordes of the Mongolian savages, not finding any room for expansion in that direction, naturally turned to the west; but the Central Asian Sea having barred their progress, they could not but pick their way through Turkestan and Bactriana, and advance along its southern coasts, till they came in contact with the Aryan nomadic savages in Western Asia, and got mixed with them. This intermingling of the two races of primitive savages, probably placed in the same stage of development, resulted in the production of a physical type which was neither purely Aryan nor purely Mongolian, but a mixture of both, in which the Mongolian type with brachy-cephalic skulls seemed to predominate, due probably to the superiority of the Mongolians in number and the prepotence of the race. But the Aryan tribes, being probably more advanced than the Mongolians in some respects, gave them their language, or more correctly speaking, certain words describing family relationships, animals, plants and other natural objects. Some of the savage tribes both of the Aryan and the Mongolian races, however, did not mix with one another, and

retained their racial characteristics and languages intact. "The irresistible impulse" for migration westwards, referred to by Grimm and Max Müller, was created by the dire necessity for expansion, felt by the Aryan and the Mongolian nomads, and their keen struggle for existence, as they were ousted from their haunts and places of refuge, and pushed forward by the more advanced tribes who also were in need of expansion. As the Semitic race had not as yet occupied Western Asia, the Aryan and the Mongolian nomads must have tarried there for a pretty long time until they were pushed forward again by other more powerful tribes following them. The European Mediterranean Sea having stopped their further progress to the west, they must have turned northwards, some occupying the Caucasus mountainous regions, while others passed through the broad isthmus of Bosphorus into Europe, where they found abundant room for expansion. The Ice Age having terminated, and the post-Glacial epoch commenced in Europe, there was a general movement among the savage tribes not only of Asia, but also of North Africa and Southern Europe, resulting in their migration to Northern, Western and North-eastern Europe whose wide grassy plains and forests afforded them sufficient shelter and security. Thus, some of the nomads from Asia passed on to the north through the plains of Russia, while others took their path up along the banks of the Danube into Central, Southern and Western Europe. These migrations advanced in waves, each succeeding wave pressing forward the one that had preceded it, until the whole of Europe was overspread by them. These waves were originated in Sapta Sindhu where, as we have already seen, a disturbance was caused by the storm that had been violently raging there, and also in Mongolia where similar conditions likely prevailed, and started on their career in the direction that offered them the least resistance. Europe during the Ice Age was very thinly populated, most probably by the Iberians in the South, and by the Canstads in the North, who lived on the

shores of the Baltic, the former probably in the later palæolithic stage of development and living by the chase, and the latter in the palæolithic stage, and subsisting mainly on fishes and sea-shells which they found in abundance, as the kitchen-middens of Denmark testify even to this day. They were in a far wilder and more degraded state than the later palæolithic Aryan and Mongolian savages who first appeared on the scene probably with more advanced modes of life, and a superior speech which they gave to those who came in contact with them. This subject will be dealt with more fully in a subsequent chapter.

We may mention here in passing that European ethnologists now hold the opinion that Europe was peopled in the Second Interglacial Period more than two hundred thousand years ago by a people whom they have designated as the "Heidelberg men," and who possessed big bodies and large forelimbs, and were unlike the true men of modern times. There was another type of men living in Europe in the Fourth Glacial Age about 50,000 years ago, who were called Neanderthalers and who, to judge from their jaw-bones, were probably the descendants of the clumsier and heavier Heidelberg men. If the Heidelberg men and the Neanderthalers belonged to the same race, then this race may be said to have lasted out for more than 200,000 years in Europe. The Neanderthaler race, to which undoubtedly belonged the Canstadt, was supplanted by the type of the "first true men" (*Homo Sapiens*) who probably developed in "South Asia" or "North Africa," and were superior to the Neanderthalers both in intelligence and primitive culture. These true men were of two distinct types. One type of them was called the Cro-Magnards, because in the grotto of Cro-Magnon were first discovered their complete skeletons. They were a tall people, with very broad faces and prominent noses, and astonishingly big brains, and their type was Mongolian, which goes to show that they had emigrated to Europe from Asia. These Cro-Magnards were probably

the products of amalgamated Mongolian and Aryan savages who entered into Europe in later Palæolithic times and extirpated the Neanderthal race. The other type of these true men was African, with Negroid characteristics, and they were called the Grimaldi men. Both the Cro-Magnards and the Grimaldi men were, some thousands of years later, superseded by superior Neolithic men, the ancestors of the present principal European races, who had entered into Europe with Neolithic culture and Aryan language from "South-Western Asia" which may have been North-Western India or Persia. They could not help amalgamating themselves with the Cro-Magnards and the Grimaldi men, and the modern European races are supposed to be the products of this amalgamation.¹

Be that as it may, the gradual advancement of the early Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu towards civilisation, through the discovery and use of Fire and the metals, the establishment of sacrifices, and the development of the art of agriculture, compelled the savage nomadic Aryans, as we have already seen, to migrate westwards from the land of their birth, and the advanced Aryans were rather glad to get rid of them. But, as already stated, there were still other Aryan hunters and nomads left in the country, who, though somewhat more advanced than the early primitive savages of the neolithic stage, in so far as they knew the use of iron, yet proved to be veritable pests to the settled and civilised Aryans who called them, as we have seen, by the hateful names of *Ddsas* and *Dasyus*, and combined together to extirpate them from the country. Many were put to death or killed in battles, and the rest, finding the country made too hot for them to live in, left it and migrated westwards through the same paths that their predecessors had taken. The descendants of the *Dasyus* hung about the wilds of Persia and Media under the name of *Dahæ* (or robbers) even in a later age. When

¹ Read also *Rgvedic Culture* Ch. I (pp. 5-20).

the Iranian branch of the Aryans settled there, the Iranian peasants who "lived in patriarchal conditions under hereditary princes were continually at war with the robbers and nomads."¹ We find a tribe named "Dahæ" located to the west of the borders of Makran in Baluchistan, and "we know that tribes of this name from the shores of the Caspian accompanied Alexander's army."² We can thus safely surmise that these were the descendants of the Dasyus whom the Aryans had driven out of their country.

Some of the nomadic Aryan tribes were also called by the names of *Sarpas* (serpents) and *Garuḍas* (birds), on account of their constant movements and migratory habits. In the *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, we find mention made of a Ṛ̥ṣi of the Sarpa tribe, who was called Arvuda and presided at a sacrifice held by the Brāhmaṇas (vi. 26. 1). In the *Mahābhārata*, we find the name of a Ṛ̥ṣi whose name was Jaratkāru and who married the sister of Vāsuki, the King of the Sarpas. That the *Sarpas* were not crawling reptiles, but Aryan nomads of a somewhat savage type, would appear from these accounts. In the *Harivaṃśa* of the Mahābhārata, it has been related that King Sagara, under the direction of Vasiṣṭha, caused certain *Kṣatriya* tribes, *vis.*, the Śakas, the Yavanas, the Kāmbojas, the Paradas, the Pahlavās, the Kolis, the *Sarpas*, the Mahiṣakas, the Darvas, the Cholas, and the Keralas to be degraded and deprived of the right of reading the Vedas or performing the sacrifices, and drove them out of the country.³ It would thus appear that the *Sarpas* were originally an Aryan tribe living in Sapta-Sindhu. "In Sarawan, we find the Sirperra, and Pliny tells us that a tribe called Sarapara resided near the Oxus."⁴ The names of these tribes bear a close resemblance to the word *Sarpa*, and it is just possible

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. II, p. 569.

² *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. III, p. 300 (Ninth Edition).

³ *Harivamsam*, Ch. 24.

⁴ *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. III, p. 300 (Ninth Edition).

that they were the descendants of the early Aryan nomads of Sapta-Sindhu, called Sarpas, who had been driven out of it. On the borders of Makran are the plains of Gressia, the ancient Gedrosia, which was probably named after the Aryan nomads known as the Garuḍas or the Śyenas. The Garuḍas and the Sarpas were at constant war with one another in ancient times, the former more advanced than the latter, and in sympathetic touch with the settled Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu. It is said that Garuḍa or Śyena, the chief of the tribe, first brought the Soma plant from heaven, or the lofty heights of the Mujavat peak in the Himālaya, and gave it to the Vedic Aryans who were thus enabled to perform the Soma sacrifice. It is related in the Purāṇas that the Soma used to be guarded by the Sarpas ; but Garuḍa defeated them and carried it to the plains of Sapta-Sindhu. We have seen in the R̥gveda that the Soma plant used to be brought from the mountains for sale by savage tribes whom the civilised Aryans hated for their ill-bred manners and irreligious life, and pitied for not performing the Soma sacrifice, although they were the purveyors of the plant, and brought it to the markets for sale. Probably these savage tribes were the Sarpas and the Garuḍas, some of whom having been driven out of Sapta-Sindhu, afterwards settled in the wilds of Baluchistan, Persia and even Southern India. For, we find mention made in the Mahābhārata of the fact of the migration of the Sarpas, with the assistance of the Garuḍas, to an island which, for aught we know, might have been the lost Southern Continent. In the Rāmāyaṇa, we find Jatāyus, the king of the birds, as an ally of King Daśaratha of Kosala, and reigning in Southern India near Janasthāna. He made a supreme effort to rescue Sītā from the clutches of Rāvaṇa, when he was carrying her off, but failed and lost his life in the attempt. Sampāti, the brother of Jatāyus, was reigning at this time at the southernmost point of the Indian Peninsula near the sea-shore. These stories go to show that some of the Garuḍas and the Sarpas might also have migrated to Southern India.

Manu says that many Aryans, in very degraded conditions, were driven out of Sapta-Sindhu and lived on the mountains of the Western frontier under the name of *Dasyus*, speaking either the Aryan language, or its corrupted forms which were known as *Mleccha*.¹

All these evidences go to prove that the Aryan savages and nomads were driven out of Sapta-Sindhu in ancient times, and they dispersed mainly towards the west, driving before them the primitive Aryan and Mongolian savages in the later palæolithic stage of development, who had been in occupation of the land.

After the expulsion of the *Dasyus* from Sapta-Sindhu, the *Paṇis*, or the *Vaṇiks*, and the Iranian branch of the Aryans, who did not subscribe to the tenets of the orthodox Aryan faith, were compelled to leave Sapta-Sindhu. The *Paṇis* probably left first, and the Iranians afterwards. The *Paṇis*, as we have already seen, were opposed to the worship of Indra, having been the votaries of *Vala*, and to the performance of the Soma sacrifice, or for the matter of that, of any sacrifice. As they were also cattle-raiders, swindlers, and usurers who "counted the days for computing interest" (Rv. viii. 66, 10), and oppressed the people by their greed and avarice, cruel speech and rough manners, the Aryan sacrificers and worshippers of Indra began to persecute and harass them so persistently that a majority were compelled to leave the shores of Sapta-Sindhu either in their merchantships for Southern India and Mesopotamia, or by the overland route across the mountains for the countries of Western Asia. Some of them must have landed in the Malabar and Coromandal coasts, or such coasts as then existed in the Southern Continent, while others settled in Mesopotamia near the mouth of the Euphrates and the Tigris, and civilised the original inhabitants of the countries, who were in an extremely savage condition. They kept up their trade and mutual

¹ *Manu Samhitā*, Chap. x, 45.

communication between Southern India and Mesopotamia, the more so, because the Western sea-coasts of the former were rich in teak-wood which was necessary for ship-building, and had therefore to be exported to Mesopotamia which was poor in timber. The Cholas and the Pāndyas on the sea-coasts of the Indian Peninsula were greatly benefited by their contact with the Panis and made rapid strides towards progress. But as the coasts of southern Persia and Mesopotamia, besides being poor in timber, did not afford the Panis sufficient scope for their trade, they must have left the country after a long sojourn in search of a better land and passed on to Palestine on the Mediterranean coast either by the overland route, or by voyaging up the Red Sea to the Isthmus of Suez. Here, as timber for ship-building was found in great abundance, and the sea-board afforded them numerous safe harbours, they settled down, and called their country Phœnicia, *i.e.*, the land of the Panis. The Pāndyas and the Cholas of Southern India, imbibing and imitating the adventurous spirit of the Panis, and being gradually initiated in the arts of civilisation by the Aryan settlers of Southern India after the disappearance of the Rajputana Sea, sent out colonies in a later age to Egypt and Mesopotamia, under the guidance of Brāhmaṇa (Aryan) priests, and founded kingdoms in Egypt and Chaldea, which played most important parts in the history of the ancient and modern world. We shall relate these stories in greater details in subsequent chapters.

The Iranian branch of the Aryans, as we have already said, had also to leave Sapta-Sindhu through religious difference with the Aryans of the orthodox faith after a long and protracted struggle, a brief account of which will be given in the next two chapters.

CHAPTER IX.

THE WAR BETWEEN THE DEVAS AND THE ASURAS.

The Devas in the R̥gveda were the benevolent powers, and the Asuras the malevolent powers of Nature. The Devas were bright and shining Gods, and the etymological meaning of the word supports this view, as it is derived from the root *div*, to shine. The etymological meaning of the word *Asura*, as we have already said, is powerful; and this word was at first applied to the Devas to denote their power *for good*. In the early Maṇḍalas of the R̥gveda, Indra, Varuṇa, Mitra, Savitr, the Maruts, Rudra, Fire (Agni), the Sky and other Devas have been addressed as *Asuras*, and even powerful kings and priests received that epithet; but afterwards, the meaning degenerated into "malevolent power," and the epithet was applied to the Dānavas *i.e.*, those evil powers that acted in opposition to the Devas, wrought mischief in the world, and harassed all living beings, especially mankind. The early application of the word "Asura" to the Devas was, however, retained by a branch of the Aryans, who continued to call their deities *Asuras*, though this practice was resented by the Vedic Aryans who accordingly called them the worshippers of the powers of evil. The latter retaliated and called the Vedic Aryans the worshippers of the powers of evil, and with them the word *Deva* came to be synonymous with such evil powers. Both the branches really worshipped the bright powers, *vis.*, Varuṇa, the Sky, the Sun, Fire, etc., and hated the powers of evil or darkness; but the retention of an original epithet by the one branch, and the rejection of it by the other made a world of difference, and created such bad blood between them as led to serious consequences, social, religious and political. "What's in a name?" asks the poet, and without stopping for an answer, himself answers the question by saying that a rose would

smell as sweet, by whatever name we might call it. This is true, no doubt; but the reply given by the poet, in his wisdom, shows that it was necessitated by the great importance that people usually attached to *names*, which led to quarrels and dissensions. The importance which two branches of the ancient Aryans attached to the names *Deva* and *Asura* led in ancient times to schisms and dissensions with very serious consequences, about which we shall write in this, and the following chapter.

Mitra and Varuṇa seem to be two of the earliest deities of the Aryans. Mitra was the deity presiding over day, and Varuṇa over night. The Sun, therefore, was Mitra, and Night, with its thousand eyes sparkling in the darkness, in the shape of bright stars and planets, was Varuṇa. There was another ancient deity, *vis.*, Fire. All these deities the ancient Aryans worshipped as Devas or bright Gods. But another powerful Deva, under the name of Indra, was revealed to the Vedic Aryans who gave him the first place among all the Devas, not only on account of his all-pervading power, but also for the beneficent deeds that he performed for the good of the world and of mankind. Hence with the Vedic Aryans, Indra became the first and foremost of the Devas (Rv. i. 102, 9). He was regarded as so all-pervading that in the second verse of the above Sūkta it has been said that "the Sky, the Earth and the *Antarikṣa* (the region between these two) reveal his visible body." It may be asked what is meant by the visible body of Indra? Verse 8 of the same Sūkta answers the question thus: "Thou art capable of carrying three *tejas* in the three *Locas* (regions), and of upholding the entire world." Sāyaṇa, the great Vedic commentator, commenting on this hymn says that the "three *tejas*" are the Sun in the sky, the Fire on the Earth, and Lightning in *Antarikṣa*, and in this interpretation he is confirmed and supported by Rv. i. 103, 1, which says: "His (Indra's) one lustre is in the Fire on the Earth, and his another lustre is in the Sun on the sky." These, therefore,

together with Lightning in mid-heaven, are the three visible bodies of Indra. That Fire burns in the Sun has been mentioned in Rv. x. 45, 3. Fire has also been identified with Lightning (Rv. x. 45, 1), and Indra with the Sun (Rv. viii. 97, 10). But Indra is greater than the Sun himself, as the translation of the following hymns would testify :—

"O Indra, thou hast given lustre to the Sun, and thou art the Maker of this Universe, and great." (Rv. viii. 98, 3.)

"Thou hast revealed the heavens" (Rv. viii. 98, 3).

"He (Indra), from whom the Sun was produced, is the oldest of all the Devas, *i.e.*, none had existed before him." (Rv. x. 120, 1.)

"Indra won the cows by producing the Sun, and revealing the days by his lustre" (Rv. ii. 18, 3).

"Indra has upheld and extended the Earth" (Rv. i. 103, 2).

The Vedic bard had all these attributes of Indra before his mind's eye when he sang: "O Indra, neither can the Heavens, nor hundreds of Earths measure thy greatness, nor a thousand Suns reveal thee." (Rv. viii. 70, 5.) Another Ṛṣi in his ecstatic vision of Indra, sang as follows: "I sing the praise of Him who is the Creator of all Creators, the Lord of this world, the Preserver of mankind, and the Destroyer of all his enemies. . . . May Indra bless us in this our sacrifice, who possesses extensively wide powers, is magnificent, and is invoked before all others." (Rv. x. 128, 7 & 8.) Another Ṛṣi has aptly compared the greatness of Indra with that of Varuṇa by saying that Indra is like an Emperor (*Samrāt*), while Varuṇa is like a King or Provincial Ruler (*Svarāt*). (Rv. vii. 82, 2). This, then, was the grand conception that the Vedic bards had formed of the great Indra. He was not merely the God of rain, or of the sky, as Western scholars are fond of telling us, but He was an all-powerful Deity, pervading and dominating the Universe,

the Creator of Creators, whose greatness could not be measured by the Heavens and hundreds of Earths, and whose lustre could not be equalled by that of thousands of burning Suns ! It was a very grand idea, probably the grandest that the early Aryans could conceive of Indra, from an adequate realisation of which the mind of even the highest and greatest modern thinker and *Yogī* would recoil, baffled and defeated. In fact, to express in the language of later Aryan philosophers, the great and mighty Indra was none other than *Saguṇa Brahman* Himself, with the three attributes of the Creator, the Preserver, and the Destroyer, combined in him. It was in honour of this Great, All-powerful, and All-pervading Deity that sacrifices were primarily performed by the ancient Aryans.

The bright and blazing Fire on the earth, and the bright Sun in the sky were the two emblems of this great Deity, In fact his "visible bodies," as aptly expressed by a Vedic bard ; and Indra could only be worshipped by these visible emblems. Fire is within every body's reach, and can be kindled whenever required. All offerings made to the sacrificial Fire, which are instantly consumed by it, reach the Deity or Deities in whose name they are offered. Hence the system of sacrifice by kindling Fire was introduced in ancient Aryan society, and Fire was regarded as the *Purohita* or Priest of the Sacrifice (Rv. i. 1, 2), through whom alone the Devas could be approached. Of all Devas, therefore, Fire was eminently fitted to be used in Sacrifice. (Rv. iv. 15, 1.) It was a delight to contemplate on the brightness of the Devas by looking at the sacrificial Fire whose bright glow, fed by the oblations of *Ghṛta* or clarified butter, helped the sacrificer to realise the nearness of the Devas, in whose praise the sacred hymns were chanted and to whom they offered the best things available, out of reverential gratitude for all the good they accomplished for them, by pouring them with *ghṛta* into Fire,—Fire the bright, the beautiful, and the emblem of the Gods. The instant consumption of these

sacred offerings by Fire afforded them the supreme satisfaction of realising that they were consumed by the Gods themselves. The kindling of the sacrificial Fire was thus regarded as essential to the worship of the Gods.

The Devas were, as we have already said, bright and benevolent deities who were constantly engaged in doing good to the world. But there were also the evil powers who were as constantly acting in opposition to the Devas. This conflict between Good and Evil, therefore, was constant, nay, everlasting. The powers of evil were dark, and appeared in the shape of darkness and black clouds. The darkness of the night extinguished the light of the bright Sun, and imprisoned him, as it were, in his gloomy cave. Indra had to wage a daily fight with the power of darkness, and release the Sun and the Dawn from his grasp. The clouds, again, imprisoned not only the Sun and the Dawn but also "the water of life" within their dark bosom, thereby causing a drought in the country. These clouds represented, as it were, the body of the Evil One, whose name was Ahi, the Serpent, or Vṛtra, the enveloper. The Sun, the Dawn and the waters had to be released for the good of mankind, in fact, of all living creatures, and Indra had to fight a hard and tough fight with this wily, withal powerful demon. The fight raged for several months at a stretch, and Indra had to be strengthened by the offering of the cheering Soma juice, and roused by the chanting of hymns. Hence arose the necessity of the *Sattras*, the daily, the periodical, and the annual sacrifices that were performed by the ancient Aryans for the propitiation of the great Indra and the other Devas. This daily and yearly conflict between the Devas and the Dānavas, *i.e.*, the Asuras or demons, is known in ancient Sanskrit literature as the *Devāsura-Saṅgrāma*, or war between the Devas and the Asuras. In one sense, it may be said that this conflict commenced from the very beginning of creation, and will last till the end of it. The *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa*, the *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa* and the other *Brāhma-*

nas have declared that the Devas and the Asuras were the sons of Prajāpati, the Creator, and all were equally powerful. In other words, the dualism of Good and Evil is co-existent with the creation of the world, and Evil is as powerful as Good. It was thought necessary to strengthen the power of the Devas, who represented the principle of Good, by means of prayers and sacrifices, and the early Aryans realising this, took to sacrifices in honour of Indra and the other Devas. But, as we have said before, there were men and sects in ancient Aryan society, who did not believe in the existence of Indra or his beneficent powers, and held independent opinions of their own. Some did not see the necessity of worshipping Fire, or performing the Soma sacrifice in honour of Indra; while others regarded Fire as too sacred to be polluted by the offerings of the flesh of sacrificed animals. This gave rise to schisms, dissensions, religious intolerance, and afterwards to active hostility resulting in terrible bloodshed.

Indra having been regarded as the all-powerful and benevolent Deva, those that were opposed to his worship were naturally put down to be malevolent, and siding with the Asura, named Vṛtra, and his hosts, and were in fact called Asuras. The Cosmic struggle was thus transferred to earth and men. The followers and the worshippers of Indra and the other deities were called the *Devas*, and the opponents of Indra-worship and sacrifice were called the *Asuras*, and these became the hateful terms to the one party, or the other. The nomadic Aryans and hunters who harassed the settled Aryans by stealing their cows and looting and pillaging their villages were regarded as the incarnations of the evil powers or the Asuras, and those that opposed the worship of Indra and the performance of sacrifices, though they were not so barbarous as the nomads, and were probably as advanced in civilisation as the Vedic Aryans, were also classified with the nomads and hunters under that name, and called the "Aryan enemies." The struggle was thus two-fold, one against the

savage nomads, and the other against the civilised and settled dissenters, all of whom were called "black" figuratively, and also from an analogy with the colour of the clouds representing the body of Vṛtra. The struggle against the savage nomads and hunters was short and swift, but that against the civilised dissenters long and arduous, as they were equally well armed, and having been more worldly, were richer and more powerful and resourceful than their opponents,—living in well-fortified towns, and successfully holding their own against the attacks of the Vedic Aryans. The kings of the latter, *vis.*, Kavi, Kutsa, Ayas, Śrutarvā, Divodāsa, Trasa-Dasyu, Rjṛgvān, Savya and others were the special *protégés* of Indra who helped them in defeating the Asura kings, Tugra, Smadiva, Mrigaya, Veśa, Satgrivi, Sambara, Varci, Navavāstva, Bṛhadratha, Kṛṣṇa, Śuṣṇa, Pipru and others. As we have already said, it was an awful struggle, resulting in terrible massacre. Many battles were fought, in some of which ten to fifty thousand Aryan enemies were killed. One R̥ṣi sings: "I burn down the world that does not acknowledge the supremacy of Indra, and revolts against Indra-worship. The enemies have been killed in the place where they were assembled. They have been completely destroyed and are lying on the *Śmaśāna* (lit cremation-ground), *i.e.*, the battle field," (Rv. i. 133, 1).¹ This was the spirit that

¹ Rv. i. 133, 1 — उभे पुनामि रोदसी असेन इहो दहामि सं महीरणिष्ठाः ।
अभिहृत्य यत्र हता अभिवा वैलस्थानं परि उद्वहा अशेरन् ॥

The literal translation of this verse is as follows: "By sacrifices I purify both the sky and the earth. I burn the wide (realms of earth) that are without Indra, and are the haunts of the wicked; wherever the enemies have congregated, they have been slain; and utterly destroyed, they sleep in a deep pit." Wilson comments on this as follows: "*Vailasthanam aśeran* 'they have slept,' or irregularly they sleep in a place which is of the nature of a *vīṣa*, a hole, a cavern, a pit. The scholiast considers the expression in this and in the third stanza to be equivalent to *Śmaśāna*, a place where dead bodies are burned, or as it would here seem to imply, a place where they are buried, as if it was the practice to bury the dead when this hymn was composed." Very likely, the dead bodies of the enemies were collected together after a battle, and thrown into a deep pit, and buried. Burial had been an earlier custom among the Vedic Aryans than cremation. (Vide *R̥gvedic Culture* ch. x pp. 405-421).

animated the Indra-worshippers against their enemies, the dissenters.

As the dissenters were opposed to the Vedic *mantras* addressed to the Devas, they did not cultivate the Vedic language as carefully as the orthodox Aryans did, and used in their speech the common dialects of the people, which were corrupted forms of the Vedic Sanskrit spoken by the cultured classes. Hence they have been described in the *R̥gveda* as *Andsa* (*na*=no, and *dsa*=mouth), *i.e.*, "mouthless." Wilson commenting on the word says that it "alludes possibly to the uncultured dialects of the barbarous tribes." But some Western scholars, in their eagerness to identify these tribes with non-Aryan aborigines, have interpreted the word to mean "noseless," *i.e.*, flat-nosed, as describing their repelling countenance, by way of distinction from the well-developed nose of the Aryans. But this interpretation is wrong, as will appear from the use of the epithet *m̐dhra-vācah* applied to the Asuras. In *Rv.* v. 32, 8 and *Rv.* vii. 6, 3 the word has been interpreted by *Sāyaṇa* to mean "persons whose power of speech is undeveloped," and in *Rv.* i. 174, 2, to mean "persons who cannot speak fluently, or who speak softly." In the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* a curious reason has been assigned to the defeat of the Asuras who, instead of addressing their enemies as "arayah" addressed them with a soft and liquid accent as "alavah" (*iii.* 2.1. 23-24).¹ Whether this was the real cause of their defeat or not, the anecdote shows the great care taken in, and the great importance attached to the correct pronunciation of words by the Vedic Aryans, and the contempt they felt for those who could not pronounce them correctly. The author of the *Brāhmaṇa* draws this moral from the anecdote: "Therefore, no *Brāhmaṇa* should pronounce words incorrectly; for such words have no power."

¹ *S̐at. Br̐dh.* (*iii.* 2. 1. 23-24):—ते अहुरा आतवचसो वै अचसो वै अचस इति वदन्तः परावचसः । तस्मात् प्राज्ञसो बभूवुः । अहुरा हि यथा वाक् ।

We have seen that the Asuras (among whom were included the ancient Iranians, the Paṇis and all dissenters) were opposed to the worship of the Devas, especially Indra, and to the performance of sacrifices. The ancient Iranians were not strict in the pronunciation of words, and generally used their corrupted forms. For example, they pronounced *Asura* as *Ahura*, *panca* as *paja*, *mātar* as *mādar*, *bhrātā* as *brader*, *sapta* as *hapta*, *santi* as *hanti*, *asmi* as *ahmi*, *Sapta-Sindhu* as *Hapta-Hendu*, *Soma* as *Homa* and *sahasra* as *hāsāra*. These are some of the instances of the soft or incorrect pronunciation of words, for which they incurred the odium and ridicule of the Vedic Aryans, and were called by the opprobrious names of "mouthless or speechless." The orthodox Aryans, believing as they did in the power of *mantras*, insisted on their correct pronunciation to make them efficacious. The Iranians were probably a sect of reformers who used the dialect spoken by the people for the propagation of their faith, and effected reforms in other matters, *e.g.*, in looking upon Fire as sacred, and unfit to be polluted by the flesh of animals or by dead bodies which used to be consigned to it by the orthodox Aryans, and in the discontinuance of the Soma sacrifice or of the Soma drink which had some intoxicating effect on the consumers. But like all reformers, whether in ancient or modern times, they were opposed and condemned for their new-fangled ways by the orthodox party. As the ancient Iranians were as strong and powerful as the Vedic Aryans, they were not easily discomfited, but they carried on the struggle for a pretty long time, now defeating the Vedic Aryans, and now being defeated by them. It was virtually a war of Principles—carried on between two powerful branches of the Aryan race, and was looked upon by the common people as a war between the deities worshipped by the respective branches, *i.e.*, a war between the Devas and the Asuras. We learn from the Ṛgveda that the enemies of the Aryans were ultimately crushed, defeated and driven out of the country,

which implied that the Devas were victorious, and the Asuras defeated. This defeat of the Asuras established in the eyes of the Vedic Aryans the supremacy and superiority of the Devas over the Asuras, of the *R̥ṣis* to whom the *mantras* were revealed over the Iranian reformers and dissenters, of the Vedic faith over the non-Vedic, of *mantras* over simple prayers couched in the dialects of the people, and of Indra over Ahura Mazda. The Vedic hymns addressed to Indra breathe a joyous triumphant spirit, and a sense of relief at this victory, which made the Vedic Aryans supremely conscious of their powers, of a sense of right and justice on their side, and of the immense superiority of their Faith and their Devas. This consciousness added a zest to their ordinary humdrum existence, and probably helped them to make strides on the path of progress.

This account of the defeat of the Asuras in the *R̥gveda* is supplemented by the elaborate, though somewhat fanciful accounts given in the *Brāhmaṇas*, which are couched in such language as to make them relate to supernatural events rather than to human affairs. It is Indra, Fire, the *Aśvins*, the Sun, the Dawn, and the *Maruts* who are represented to have been fighting with *Vṛtra* and his hosts. It is the account of the struggle of the Cosmic Powers over again, though here and there we cannot fail to catch glimpses of human and mundane affairs with which the struggle was mainly connected.

Though the *Brāhmaṇas* are not within the scope of our treatment, it will not, I think, be quite out of place to make occasional references to them, if only to throw some additional light on points that are not quite clear in the *R̥gveda*. There are some direct references in the *R̥gveda* to the *Pap̥is* having been vanquished by an Aryan king in a battle, and having fled from *Sapta-Sindhu* in a body; but I have not come across any reference to the Iranians or the worshippers of Ahura Mazda having left the country on account of

religious dissensions, though it has been related in a general way in the R̥gveda that the dissenters who were called Asuras were defeated, and expelled from the country. It is just possible that some of the Asuras left the country, while others withdrew to its remote parts or lived in Sapta-Sindhu in a sort of armed truce during a part of R̥gvedic times; and it was only when the cleavage became well marked, and the gulf between the two sects too wide to be bridged that their final dispersion took place. There were many points of agreement between the followers of Ahura Mazda, and the Vedic Aryans. Both sects worshipped the Fire with offerings, among which, however, the Asuras did not include the flesh of sacrificed animals; both worshipped many common Devas with identical names; but the Asuras did not acknowledge Indra to be the supreme Deva, though they worshipped him in substance under the name of *Vytraghna*; both performed the Soma sacrifice which the Asuras (Iranians) called Hoama sacrifice, though they objected to the intoxicating properties of the juice, and tried to substitute the plant by another of the same genus, and both were equally civilised and powerful. The retention of the name of *Asura* for their deities by these dissenters, and the denial of Indra's existence or superiority were the main points of difference and friction between the two sects; and the Vedic Aryans called them, as we have seen, by the name of *Asuras*, used in the bad sense of the word, which the latter retaliated by attaching an equally bad sense to the word *Deva*, which, however, had no etymological justification as that of the word *Asura*. It is sufficient, however, for our purpose to remember that these dissenters were simply called *Asuras* and not Iranians, for they had not settled in Iran or Airyana as yet.

The Brāhmaṇas relate that the Asuras as well as the Devas were the progeny of Prajāpati and both performed sacrifices and became powerful. But the Asuras having tried to establish their supremacy over the Devas, a conflict arose

between them, which lasted for a long time, during which several bloody battles were fought. The *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa* (i. 3. 3) says that at first there were fightings in the east, the west, the south and the north, in all of which the Devas were defeated by the Asuras; but when the fighting took place in the north-east direction (of Sapta-Sindhu), the Devas were victorious, and since then, this direction has been regarded as invincible. Hence, when the Soma plant was brought for sacrifice, it became the custom among the Aryan worshippers of the Devas to take it out from the cart from that direction. ¹

It is further related in the Brāhmaṇa that as the Devas attributed their defeat to their having no king, they made Soma their king; and with the help of Soma, they became victorious in all the directions. This undoubtedly refers to the controversy about the use of the Soma juice in sacrifice, which was discontinued by the Asuras or the ancestors of the Iranians for sometime, as we shall see later on, and bears testimony to the fact that the worshippers of the Devas established the necessity and efficacy of the Soma sacrifice, and carried their point in the teeth of well-organized opposition.

There is another anecdote in the *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa* in connection with this conflict between the Devas and the Asuras, which is worth mentioning here. The Asuras thought of barring the Devas from *Bhuloka* (the Earth), *Antarīkṣa* (the Mid-heaven), and *Dyuloka* (the Heaven) by constructing three walls, *vis.*, one of iron, another of silver, and the third of gold respectively. Against this plan and device of the Asuras, the Devas constructed a *sadas* (a place of sacrifice), an *agnidhra* or place for the sacred sacrificial Fire, and two carts named *habirdhan* in which offerings for Sacrifice were brought. After that, they performed the

¹ *Ait. Brāh.* i. 3. 3.

Sacrifice, named *Upāsats*. At the end of the first day's sacrifice, the Asuras were driven out of the earth; at the end of the second day's sacrifice, they were driven out of mid-heaven; and at the end of the third day's sacrifice, they were driven out of heaven. Then the Asuras fell back on the six seasons; but the Devas drove them out of these by performing six *Upāsats*. The Asuras then fell back on the twelve months, from which they were expelled by the Devas performing twelve *Upāsats*. Then the Asuras fell back on the twenty-four fortnights, from which also the Devas expelled them by performing twenty-four sacrifices. Lastly, the Asuras fell back on day and night (*Ahorātra*), from which also the Devas expelled them by performing two daily sacrifices, one in the morning, by which they were expelled from day-time, and one in the after-noon, by which they were expelled from the night. This compelled the Asuras to take refuge only at the junctions of Day and Night at both ends, *i.e.*, early dawn, and evening.¹

This anecdote proves that the Asuras were rich in worldly possessions and prosperous, which enabled them to construct three walls of iron, silver, and gold, but they were poor in spiritual powers which could only be acquired, according to the Vedic Aryans, by the performance of sacrifices and religious rites. The Devas, though not rich from a worldly point of view, were spiritually strong; hence, they were enabled to expel the Asuras from the three worlds by the performance of three sacrifices; from the six seasons, by the performance of six sacrifices; from the twelve months, by the performance of twelve sacrifices; from the 24 fortnights, by the performance of 24 sacrifices; and from the days and nights, by performing the sacrifices twice daily. This was the cause of the victory of the Devas; in other words, it was by spiritual culture, and the performance of sacrifice twice daily, and not by mere worldly possessions, that they became

¹ *Aiç Brdh.* (i. 4. 6).

victorious in the long run. This marks the very characteristics of the two branches of the Aryan race, which are observable even to this day.

It has been previously said that the Asuras, without offering any *havyas* (oblations) to the sacrificial Fire, ate them up themselves. On the other hand, the Vedic Aryans offered all the best things to Agni even the flesh of the animals sacrificed.¹ The Asuras were evidently opposed to such sacrifices, and tried to stop them by force. But the Devas drove them away by having recourse to a device. When the animal was made ready for sacrifice, the Asuras came towards the *yūpa* (wooden block for sacrificing an animal!). Seeing this, the Devas made three concentric walls of fire for protecting themselves and the sacrifice. The very sight of these walls of fire surrounding the animal to be sacrificed was sufficient to drive them away from the place of sacrifice, as it was highly repugnant and revolting to their sentiments. Thus with the help of the sacrificial Fire, the Devas succeeded in killing the Asuras and the Rākṣasas both in the east and west.²

It further appears from a perusal of the Brāhmaṇas that the Asuras were so much persecuted by the Devas that they were compelled to assume the forms of Brāhmaṇas and *Yatis* (ascetics) for self-protection. This is probably another way of saying that the priests and the ascetics of the Asuras were similar in appearance to the Brāhmaṇas and the ascetics of the Vedic Aryans, and were indistinguishable from them, as they all very likely wore the same sacerdotal robes and badges. The *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa* says that "Indra killed Viśvartīpa, the son of Tvaṣṭṛ, as well as Vṛtra. He killed the *Yatis*, and threw their dead bodies to be

¹ *Paśu* or animal (cattle) was in the earliest times regarded as wealth; and its flesh at one time formed the main article of food. Hence flesh or meat was prized above all things.

² *Ait. Brāh.* ii. 7. 1.

devoured by wild dogs. He also killed the *Arurmaghas*, and thwarted *Brhaspati*, for which acts the Devas condemned Indra who was thus deprived by them of the Soma drink.....
 ...But Indra afterwards forcibly took the Soma drink away from *Tvaṣṭr*, and since then has been entitled to it." ¹ The *Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa* also says that *Tvaṣṭr* created a *Brāhmaṇa* by name *Vṛtra* whom Indra killed. He also killed *Tvaṣṭr*'s son *Viśvarūpa*, hacked to pieces the Asuras who assumed the forms of *Yatis* or ascetics, and got their bodies devoured by wild dogs. He further killed the Asuras named *Arurmaghas*, who assumed the forms of *Brāhmaṇas*.

These anecdotes bring us at once from supernatural to mundane matters,—from the Devas and Asuras to *Brāhmaṇas*, *Yatis* and *Arurmaghas*. It seems that before the split between the two branches of the Aryans occurred, their priests had been *Brāhmaṇas* and *Yatis* or ascetics. But after the split had been effected, *Tvaṣṭr* created some persons called *Arurmaghas* who assumed the forms of *Brāhmaṇas*, and whom Indra killed, because in his superior wisdom, he came to know them to be really Asuras in disguise, and not *Brāhmaṇas*. But this killing of *Brāhmaṇas* (though they were really Asuras) by Indra and his followers made them incur the displeasure and censure of both Gods and men, and no Soma drink was consequently offered to Indra, or any Soma sacrifice performed in his honour. It has been said, however, that Indra forcibly snatched the Soma drink from *Tvaṣṭr*, which is as much as to say that, though the Soma sacrifice and Indra-worship had been discontinued for sometime, they were renewed again by the followers of Indra.

It remains for us now to see who this *Tvaṣṭr* was, and who these *Arurmaghas*. In Rv. x. 110, 9 we find the name of *Tvaṣṭr* as *Apri Devatā* or God of Fire, and his attributes mentioned as follows :—

¹ *Ibid.*, vii. 35. 2.

"O Hota, worship to-day that Deva whose name is Tvaṣṭṛ, who has produced *Dyāvā-Prithivī* (Heaven and Earth) and created the various living creatures."

It would thus appear that Tvaṣṭṛ was identified with the Creator Himself. His son was Viśvarūpa. The *Taittirīya Samhitā* thus speaks of him :—

"Viśvarūpa, son of Tvaṣṭṛ, was the priest of the Devas, and was their nephew, being sister's son. He had three mouths, through one of which he drank the Soma juice ; through the second, he used to drink wine ; and through the third, he used to take his usual food. He used to say openly that the share of *havis* was legitimate to the Devas ; but in private parlance, he would say that the Asuras were entitled to it. Indra having come to know this, and apprehended a revolution, cut off his three heads with the help of his thunder-bolt. The killing of this Brāhmaṇa priest by Indra made him incur the sin generally attached to the killing of a Brāhmaṇa."

The Devas, as we have seen, were fond of, and drank the Soma juice ; but the Asuras drank *surā* or wine, and men ate food. It is clear from the above anecdote that Viśvarūpa used to partake of the offerings, made respectively by the Devas, the Asuras and men, with the help of his three different mouths. As the Asuras rejected or were deprived of the Soma juice, and substituted a new drink in its place, prepared from another plant, which they considered to be less intoxicating than the Soma juice, the Brāhmaṇas retaliated by calling their drink by the name of *wine*, i.e., a really intoxicating liquor as compared with the Soma drink, and therefore unfit for being offered to the Devas. It appears also that the religion of the Devas, the Asuras and men was one at first, as Viśvarūpa received all these offerings from all the votaries, and partook of them. But Indra, having killed Viśvarūpa, Tvaṣṭṛ in his rage discontinued the offering of the Soma drink to him, though the latter afterwards forcibly took a share of it from him.

It was Tvaṣṭṛ who is said to have forged the thunder-bolt for Indra (Rv. i. 61, 6; 189, 14), which, however, was used by the latter in killing his two sons, Vṛtra and Viśvārupa. This created a revulsion of feeling against Indra, and his worship was consequently discontinued by Tvaṣṭṛ's followers who substituted him for Indra. As Tvaṣṭṛ was the God of Fire, he was worshipped by them as Fire.

But Fire on earth was identical with the Sun in heaven, and also represented the splendours of the great Creator of the Sun himself whom the Āsuras and their descendants, the Iranians, called *Mithra* (Vedic, Mitra). Therefore, Fire or Tvaṣṭṛ, the Sun and Mithra formed, as it were, a Trinity. The Sun was called by them *Ahura Masda*, which appears to be a corruption of the Sanskrit *Asura Maghavā*, and literally means "the great God fit to be worshipped by men." It should be pointed out that in the R̥gveda, the epithet, *Maghavan*, has been usually applied to Indra, though other Devas also have sometimes shared it with him. Therefore, it may be surmised that *Ahura Masda*, or as he is commonly called, *Ormuzd*, in a still more corrupted form, was equal to the Vedic Indra or the Sun, and Tvaṣṭṛ was the same God in another form, *vis.*, Fire. It will be in the recollection of our readers that in the R̥gveda, the Sun and the Fire have been called the visible bodies of Indra who created both of them, and was therefore also equal to Mithra of the Āsuras. As Fire belongs to the earth, he is the God with whom men can easily associate, and through whom they can worship both the Sun, or Ormuzd, and the still higher deity, Mithra. Tvaṣṭṛ thus became the preceptor of men, and as he existed from time immemorial, he was called *Farat Tvaṣṭṛ*, or the ancient Tvaṣṭṛ, which was corrupted into *Zara-thustra*, and still further, into Zoroaster. As with the orthodox Aryans, Agni or Fire (Brahmā) revealed the Vedas, so with the Iranians, Zara-thustra, or Zoroaster (the ancient Fire God) revealed to them their religion as embodied in their sacred

Scripture, the Zend-Avesta. Hence, the Asura tribes afterwards settled in Airyana or Iran, called themselves the followers of Zoroaster, and are known as Zoroastrians. But the Zoroaster of history was a great Prophet who appeared in a later age, and was probably regarded as an incarnation of Jarat Tvastṛ or the Fire-God. He came to the world for the good of the race, and for embodying the tenets of the religion in the sacred Scripture, the Zend-Avesta. The religion had existed from very ancient times, and it remained for him only to give it a new shape and life. As a writer observes: "A great religion is always a slow growth, and any particular religious teacher to whom it may be ascribed, after all, has done nothing more than focalise the national tendency, or form a centre about which the ideas and tendencies of an epoch may crystallize.....In the case of the Zoroastrian religion, it was finally given tangible and permanent expression in the pages of the Zend-Avesta, or sacred book of the Persians. The national spirit given expression is.....in many ways of a high order.....It seems quite clear that the early religion of the Persians was almost a pure monotheism, not did it in its later stages depart more widely from the monotheistic type than has been the case, at some stage of its developments, with every other great religion of which we have any knowledge. Thus the Zoroastrian system admits of a Sun-God, Mithra, who is the creator of the God of Light, Ormuzd, and of the God of Darkness, Ahriman.....When we try to get close to the thought of this creed, we find that Ormuzd is regarded equal to Mithra, even though created by him, and that on the other hand, Ahriman is supposed ultimately to be conquered by the God of Light, notwithstanding the ages of time throughout which he wields malevolent powers." ¹

Zoroaster, the Prophet, "asserted the existence of a kingdom of light, and a kingdom of darkness; in the former, reigns

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. II, p. 566.

Ormuzd, the author and giver of all good; in the latter. Ahriman, the source of all evil, moral as well as physical. The throne of Ormuzd is surrounded by the seven Amshaspands, the princes of light, of whom the sage himself was the first."¹

It would thus appear that the sage was an incarnation of *Varat Tvastr*, the first Prince of Light, who, with six others, surrounded the throne of Ormuzd.

No reference to the name of the sage has been made in the R̥gveda, or the later Vedic Literature, though the name of Tvastr as Fire and Creator is found, as we have seen, in the former. The Prophet, therefore, must have flourished in a much later period, though the religion, as we have already said, had been in existence from very early times. It was not known in R̥gvedic times as the Religion of Zoroaster, but as a religion of the Asuras who worshipped *Asura Maghavá*, *Ahura Masda*, or *Ormuzd*. Hence it was also known as the Religion of Ormuzd, and its followers were called Ormuzdians, or as the later Vedic Aryans called them, *Arurmaghas*. It was these Arurmaghas, described as Bráhmaṇas in the *Altareya Bráhmaṇa* and the *Taittiriya Samhitá*, who were killed by Indra, because he knew them to be Asuras under the garb of Bráhmaṇas, and as we have seen, their killing led to great religious dissensions and schisms in ancient Sapta-Sindhu, which deprived Indra of his favourite Soma drink for a time, to the point of being ousted from worship. These *Arurmaghas* (which word, by the way, has remained unexplained up to this time), therefore, were no other than the priests or votaries of *Asura Maghavá*, *Ahura Masda*, or *Ormuzd*, the great God of Light, whom the Asuras, or dissenters from the orthodox Vedic faith, worshipped in place of Indra.² From the fact that Indra was censured and condemned for killing these Bráhmaṇas, it appears

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 636.

² These *Arurmaghas* were probably the ancestors of the Magi or priests of ancient Media who were simply called *maghas* or *Magi*. They formed a

that though the Asuras had ceased to worship Indra, and were worshipping Asura Maghavá, under a new system of faith, they were still regarded as belonging to the Aryan community in Sapta-Sindhu, and their priests looked upon as Bráhmaṇas and *Yatis*, for the sin of killing whom Indra had to incur a public censure. This furnishes us with a curious instance of catholicity and sympathetic tolerance in an age which seems to have been characterized by religious intolerance and bigotry of the worst type. Very probably, Indra's censure was due to a reaction of the popular mind from the terrible scenes of blood-shed and persecution that were enacted in the ancient land, in the name of religion. The killing of the Arurmaghas, however, though afterwards condoned by the Vedic Aryans, created a revulsion against Indra in the mind of the followers of Ahura Mazda, and the breach between the two sects widened beyond repair.

But though the schism had taken place, and there had been much bloodshed and persecution in consequence of it, the Asuras in all probability did not leave Sapta-Sindhu in a body during R̥gvedic times. This they probably did in a later age, after the Papis had mostly left the country. But it is just possible that those who were defeated by the Vedic Aryans in battles, and had their forts broken or demolished, emigrated towards the north-west, and after roaming about

hereditary sacerdotal caste and Herodotus thus writes about their status: "A Magian man stands by and chants a theogony thereto, for such the Persians say the chant is. Without a Magian it is not lawful for him to offer prayers." Prof. Moulton writes: "From the first the Greek writers assume that the Magi were priests, with special skill in divination and oneiromancy. They were already essential for all priestly acts, and identified thoroughly with the Persian religious system. Moreover from the fourth century B. C. down, there are frequent allusions to Zoroaster himself as a Magus, and many of the foremost modern authorities have accepted this as probably true." (*Early Zoroastrianism*, pp. 196-197). The word *Magha* or *Magus* was probably a corruption of *Maghavan*, meaning "worshipful," a title which was probably applied to these priests. Moulton's theory that the Magians or the Magi belong to a non-Aryan race is quite untenable.

in several countries in a helpless condition, finally settled down in Bactriana which they called *Arya Vaejo* or *Airyana Vaejo* (which literally means "the nursery, or place of origin of the Aryans"), to distinguish it from Sapta-Sindhu which they were compelled to leave, and for which they no longer entertained any love, as it was inhabited by their hereditary enemies, the Vedic Aryans. This Airyana Vaejo was afterwards destroyed by an invasion of Ice in post-R̥gvedic times, probably in consequence of vast volumes of watery vapours, generated by the drying up of the bed of the Rajputana Sea, having been precipitated there as snow, which compelled Yima, the ancient leader of the Iranians, to leave it with his people and migrate towards the north, to the Arctic region. Long after this event, Airyana Vaejo became again habitable, and the Prophet Zoroāster¹ settled there with his followers, and made it a centre for the propagation of his new reformed faith. As this chapter has already grown too long, I will deal with the subject of the dispersion of the followers of Ahura Mazda from Sapta-Sindhu in the next chapter.

¹ Xanthos of Lydia, a contemporary of Artaxerxes I (465-424 B. C.), places Zoroaster 6,000 years before the expedition of Xerxes. Aristotle makes him 6,000 years before the death of Plato. This date, however is not accepted by modern European scholars. Hertel makes him live about 660-583 B. C. If that were so, Artaxerxes who lived in the fifth century B. C., would not have fixed Zoroaster's time about 6,000 years before the expedition of Xerxes, and Aristotle calculated a similar date. Zoroaster's date, however, has not yet been definitely settled, though the date of the classical writers closely tallies with Vedic chronology. (*Vide* Keith's *The Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads* vol. ii, Appendix A. Page 614 ff. 1925).

CHAPTER X.

THE DISPERSION OF THE FOLLOWERS OF AHURA MAZDA FROM SAPTA-SINDHU.

Professor Max Müller after a careful study of the Vedas and the Zend-Avesta arrived at the following conclusion :

"The Zoroastrians were a colony from Northern India. They had been together for a time with the people whose sacred songs have been preserved to us in the Veda. A schism took place and the Zoroastrians migrated westward to Arachosia and Persia."¹

Elsewhere he said : "Still more striking is the similarity between Persia and India in religion and mythology. Gods unknown to any Indo-European nation are worshipped under the same name in Sanskrit and Zend ; and the change of some of the most sacred expressions in Sanskrit into names of evil spirits in Zend only serves to strengthen the conviction that we have here the usual traces of a schism which separated a community that had once been united."²

Dr. Haug also came to the same conclusion : "The ancestors of the Brahmins, and those of the Parsis (the ancient Iranians) lived as brother tribes peacefully together. This time was anterior to the combats of the *Devas* and the *Asuras*, which are so frequently mentioned in the Brâhmaṇas, the former representing the Hindus, the latter Iranians."³

It would appear, however, that the Iranians did not all at once settle in Arachosia or Persia after leaving Sapta-Sindhu. They had roamed about in many countries in a

¹ *Science of Language*, Vol. II, p. 170 (Fifth Edition).

² *Chips from a German Workshop*, Vol. I, p. 83.

³ Dr. Haug's *Introduction to the Aitareya Brâhmaṇa*, Vol. I, pp. 2-3, Edition 1863.

helpless condition before they settled down as agriculturists in their new colony. We have said in the previous chapter that the main body of the followers of Ahura Mazda did not leave Sapta-Sindhu during Ṛgvedic times, though it is likely that some tribes who could not hold their own against the attacks of the Vedic Aryans did so, and got themselves scattered in different parts of Asia and Europe. The *Arurmaghas* or the followers of Ahura Mazda were regarded as *Brāhmaṇas* and were suffered to live in Sapta-Sindhu, as long as they did not become obtrusive or militant. But as soon as they became active propagandists and aggressive, attacking and condemning the Vedic faith and the Vedic rites, under the instigation of their priests or prophets, a regular campaign against them was organized and started by the Vedic Aryans, which resulted in their ultimate expulsion from Sapta-Sindhu. As I have already said in the last chapter, the name of Zarathustra does not occur in the *Brāhmaṇas* or the later Vedic literature, though the name of *Tvaṣṭṛ* as the Fire God and Creator, occurs in them as well as in the Ṛgveda. Zarathustra, therefore, must have flourished in comparatively recent times. It was he who gave the Ahura religion the shape in which we find it in the *Zend-Avesta*, and instilled into it a new life and vigour by shaking off the foreign accretions that had gathered round it, and purifying it as much as possible. He was, therefore, a great Reformer of the Ahura religion, and his words carried the greatest weight with its votaries when he declared himself or came to be regarded as a Prophet, and an incarnation of *Jarat Tvaṣṭṛ*, the first of the seven *Amshaspands*, or Princes of Light, who surrounded the throne of Ahura Mazda. Inspired and encouraged by his teachings, his followers must have assumed a fresh militant attitude towards the Vedic faith, and thereby brought upon themselves the wrath of the united Vedic Aryans who compelled them to fly far from Sapta-Sindhu, the land of their birth. It was when reduced to this helpless condition and sorry plight that the Prophet

with his followers gave vent to the following lamentations as are recorded in the *Gāthā Ustavaiti* :

"To what country shall I go? Where shall I take my refuge? What country is sheltering the master (Zarathustra) and his companions? None of the servants pays reverence to me, nor the wicked rulers of the country." [4. (46) 1].

"I know that I am helpless. Look at me, being amongst few men. For, I have few men. I implore thee (Ahur Mazd, the wise) weeping, thou living God." [4 (46) 2].

"The sway is given into the hands of the priests and prophets of idols, who, by their atrocious actions, endeavour to destroy the human life..." [4 (46) 11].¹

Thus expelled from Sapta-Sindhu and other places inhabited by the Vedio Aryans, the followers of the Prophet probably roamed about in various lands mentioned in the first Fargard of the Vendidad until they found a safe shelter in old Airyana Vaejo which, though destroyed by Ice in a former age, had again become habitable. This province, according to Spiegel, "is to be placed in the furthest east of the Iranian plateau, in the region where the Oxus and the Jaxartes take their rise," though Baron Von Bunsen supposes it to be "the table-land of Pamir and Khokand."² The lands mentioned in the Fargard of the Vendidad are (1) Airyana Vaejo; (2) Sughdha or Sogdiana (Samarkand); (3) Mouru or Margiana (Mero); (4) Bakhdid or Bactria (Balkh); (5) Nisaya or Nisæa; (6) Haroyu (Sans. *Śarayū*) or Arcia (Herat); (7) Vaekareta (Cabul); (8) Urva, Cabul, according Dr. Haug, or land around Ispahan, according to Dermesteter; (9) Khnenta in Vehrkena (Kandahar); (10) Harahvaiti (Sans. *Sarasvati*, or more probably *Irāvatī*) or Arachosia (Harāt); (11) Haētumant (Helmend); (12) Ragha (Rai); (13) Chakhra; (14) Varena; (15) Hapta-Hendu (Sapta-Sindhu) and (16)

¹ Dr. Martin Haug's *Religion of the Parsees*, pp. 152, 155 and 166. Ed. 1862.

² Muir's *Original Sanskrit Texts*, Vol. II, pp. 332, 481. Ed. 1871.

Rangha. These were the sixteen countries which were known to the ancient Iranians. There is a controversy among some Western scholars as to the geographical and historical value of this account of the countries mentioned in the Vendidad. Bunsen is of opinion that the first mentioned country was the primeval abode of the Iranians, from which they subsequently emigrated to the other countries—an opinion with which Spiegel at first agreed. But it appears that the latter subsequently revised this opinion as will appear from his remarks in his Introduction to the Avesta (Vol. II, p. cix): "I cannot coincide in the attempt to discover in the first chapter of the Vendidad an account of the gradual migrations of the Iranians. It has been said that, that list of countries is a continuous history of their attempts at colonization, beginning with their northern home, and ending with Hapta-Hendu or India. But the list nowhere speaks of any such migration.....Hence, I see in this chapter nothing but a specification of the countries known to the Iranians at a particular time. This period, however, cannot be a recent one, as the name Hapta-Hendu is connected with the Vedic period."

This seems to me to be the soundest view of the matter. The followers of Ahura Mazda were very closely connected not only in blood, but also in language,¹ and religious faith and practice² (of course, before the regrettable schism took

¹ Geldner writes in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, (Vol. XXI, p. 247; 11th edition): "The clearest evidence of the extreme age of the language of the Gāthās is its striking resemblance to the oldest Sanskrit, the language of the Vedic poems. The Gāthā language (much more than the later Zend) and the language of the *Vedas* have a close resemblance, exceeding that of any two Romanic languages; they seem hardly more than two dialects of one tongue. Whole strophes of the Gāthās can be turned into good old Sanskrit by the application of certain phonetic laws."

² Eduard Myer thus summarises in the same work (p. 203) the common elements of the two religions: "Fire-worship, especially the sacrificial flame; the preparations of the intoxicating *Soma*, which fills man with divine strength and uplifts him to the Gods; the injunction to 'good thoughts and good

place) with the Vedic Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu which was their common home. When a difference in religious opinion and practice arose, they came to be called Asuras by the Vedic Aryans whom they, in their turn, called Devas or Daevas, *i.e.*, Devils. This religious controversy gradually degenerated, even in R̥gvedic times, into an implacable hatred for one another; and from words, they came to blows, and from blows to bloodshed, resulting in the defeat of the Asuras. Some, as we have already said, fled to other countries, while others remained in Sapta-Sindhu peacefully, without provoking further quarrels. "The Soshyantas or fire-priests," writes Dr. Haug, "who seemed to be identical with the Atharvans, are to be regarded as the real predecessors of Zarathustra Spitoma, who paved the way for the grand religious reform carried out by the latter. It is distinctly said (Yas. 53. 2), that the good Ahura religion was revealed to them and that they professed it in opposition to the Deva religion, like Zarathustra himself and his disciples. (Yas. 12. 7). These ancient sages, therefore, we must regard as the founders of the Ahura religion, who first introduced agriculture and made it a religious duty, and commenced war against the Deva religion." ¹ We have seen the result of this war during R̥gvedic times, and prior to the age of the Brāhmaṇas in which the *Soshyantas* (who were probably identified in the R̥gveda with *Suṣṇa*, the demon of drought) and their followers got the worst, most of them having been compelled to leave the country. It was only when Zarathustra, the fiery and intolerable Reformer and Prophet, flourished, that fresh troubles arose, as the result of which his

works' imposed on the pious by Veda and Avesta alike; the belief in an unwavering order (*ṛta*)—a law controlling gods and men and dominating them all; yet with this, a belief in the power of the magical formulæ (*mantra*), exclamations and prayers, to whose compulsion not merely demons (the evil spirits of deception—*druh*), but even the gods (*daeva*) must submit, and lastly, the institution of a priesthood of fire-kindlers (*atharvan*) who are at once the repositories of all sacred traditions and mediators in all intercourse between earth and heaven."

¹ Dr. Haug's *Religion of the Persians*, p. 251. Ed. 1862.

followers were driven out of the country, who roamed about in a helpless condition until they made their final halt in old *Airyana Vaejo* which had been destroyed by Ice in a former age when Yima had been its ruler, and so named probably to denote the original place where the Ormuzdian religion had been first propagated, preached and practised undisturbed. This land, therefore, was given precedence over all other lands, and regarded as Paradise, when compared with Hapta-Hendu, from which the Iranians had been driven out, and for which they no longer entertained any love, in as much as it was peopled by their inveterate enemies, the Vedic Aryans. We may, accordingly, conclude that the naming of Hapta-Hendu towards the end of the list, as given in the first Fargard of the Vendidad, does not indicate that the Iranians emigrated from their northern home and came to Sapta-Sindhu at the end of their migrations. Such a theory would be against the conclusions at which all impartial students and critics must arrive after a careful study of the Vedas and the Zend Avesta.

Secure in this earthly paradise, and free from molestations, Zarathustra began a thorough-going reform of the old religion as professed by the votaries of Ahura Mazda. The following extracts from Yasna 12 of the Avesta will unmistakably indicate the line of reform: "I cease to be a Deva worshipper. I profess to be a Zoroastrian Mazdayasna (worshipper of Ahura Mazda), an enemy of the Devas, and a devotee to Ahura, ...I forsake the Devas, the wicked, bad, false, untrue, the originators of mischief, who are most baneful, destructive, the basest of all beings...I am a Mazdayasna, a Zoroastrian Mazdayasna. I profess this religion by praising and preferring it to others."¹

The Zoroastrians forsook not only the "wicked and false" Devas, but also the Soma sacrifice which characterized the Vedic Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu. *Gáthá Akunavanti*

¹ Dr. Haug's *Religion of the Persians*, p. 165, Ed. 1862.

(Yasna 32) says: "Ye Devas, sprung out of the evil spirit who takes possession of you by intoxication (*Soma*), teaching you manifold arts to deceive and destroy mankind, for which arts you are notorious everywhere." ¹ In *Gáthá Spenta-Mainyus* also we find: "When will appear, thou wise, the men of vigour and courage to pollute that intoxicating liquor? This diabolical art makes the idol. priests so overbearing, and the evil spirit, reigning in the countries, increases this pride." ² Dr. Haug comments on the verse of this *Gáthá* as follows: "This verse refers to the Brahman's *Soma* worship which, as the cause of so much evil, was cursed by Zarathustra."

But though Zarathustra thus condemned the *Soma*, with a view to dissuade his followers from using it in their rituals, the old party seemed to retain a predilection for the drink, and would not easily give it up. Hence the High Priests effected a sort of compromise by substituting the intoxicating *Soma* beverage "by a more wholesome and invigorating drink prepared from another plant, together with the branches of the pomegranate tree, and without any process of fermentation; but the name in the Iranian form *Homa* remained, and some of the ceremonies also."³ We need not, therefore, be at all surprised that Zarathustra also suddenly became an admirer of the *Soma* who, it is said, once visited him in his brilliant supernatural body. "Being asked by the prophet who he was, he told that he was *Homa*, and requested him to worship him in the same way as the ancient sages and prophets had done. Zarathustra, after having attentively listened to the angel's reports, bowed before him and commenced to consecrate the branches of the *Homa* plant which were before him, in order to put into them secret powers." Zarathustra then praised *Soma* or *Homa* as follows: "I praise the high mountains where thou hast

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 145.

² *Ibid.*, p. 159.

³ Dr. Haug's *Religion of the Persians*, pp. 219-220; also Chapter IV of this book. (pp. 60-61.)

grown, Homa! I praise the Earth, the wide, which is full of ways, labouring, thy Mother, Homa!"¹ This conversion of Zarathustra to the Soma cult is remarkable, in as much as it goes to show that his followers came from Sapta-Sindhu where the Soma-sacrifice prevailed. The Soma plant, as our readers will remember, grew nowhere else excepting on the Himālaya and in some regions of Sapta-Sindhu. One of the reasons why the Soma plant was substituted by another plant by Zarathustra may have been its scarcity in Airyana Vaejō where the plant did not probably take kindly to the soil.

"It is plain," says Dr. Issac Taylor, "from the character of the culture words common to Zend and Sanskrit that the Indians and Iranians had before their separation advanced farther in the path of civilisation than any of the other Aryan nations. They knew themselves as a united people (Sanskrit *Arya*, Zend *Airya*). They had common words for bridge, column, battle, fight, sword, spear, and bow-string, and they could count up to a thousand. But the agreement in religious terms is the most striking proof of the stage of culture they had reached. They had common words for priest, sacrifice, song of praise, religious aspersion, for heroes and demons, and for Mithra, the God of Light. The chief Indian God, Indra, the god of storms, who in the R̥gveda is a beneficent deity, becomes in the Avesta a malignant power. It was formerly believed that a religious schism was the primary cause of the separation of the Indians and Iranians, but this notion is now universally given up."²

Dr. Taylor does not say on what grounds has this notion been universally given up. But if it has really been given up by the Western scholars, so much the pity for historical truth. The very fact that Indra, not merely "the God of storms," but the mightiest beneficent deity of the Vedic Aryans, was regarded by the Iranians as a malignant

¹ Dr. Haug's *Religion of the Parsees*, pp. 167-168.

² Taylor's *Origin of the Aryans*, pp. 189-190. (Second Edition, 1892.)

power goes to the very root of the religious dissension between the two sects, and points to the real cause of their separation, as we have shown very clearly in these pages from evidences adduced both from the Vedic literature and the Zend-Avesta. It is therefore extremely surprising to be told that religious schism was not the primary cause of their separation. The followers of Ahura Mazda felt such a great repugnance for the name of Indra, to whose prowess were ascribed their defeat and slaughter by Vedic Aryans, that they came to look upon him as Devil himself, and his votaries as Devil-worshippers, though, strangely enough, Indra's epithet of *Vṛtraghna* was retained by them as the epithet of their supreme angel. The Soma sacrifice also was at first discarded as unworthy of the followers of Ahura Mazda, not only on account of the intoxicating properties of the Soma drink, but also because it was mainly connected with the worship of Indra and thus savoured of the Devil. But as ancient custom, like superstitions, die very hard, Zoroaster had to re-introduce it in the rituals under the very old name, though the drink was made less intoxicating by an altogether different process of preparation. In the face of these and the other evidences dealt with in this and the previous chapter, it would be bold to assert, that religious schism was not the primary cause of the separation of the two sects.

We have already stated the 'opinions of Spiegel and Bunsen about the probable situation of Airyana Vaejo, the Paradise of the Iranians, where they settled and prospered after their expulsion from Sapta-Sindhu. Whether it was situated in the farthest east of the Iranian plateau at the sources of the Oxus and the Jaxartes, or on the table-land of the Pamir and Khokand, there can be no question that it was placed on sufficiently elevated land, to be called "Paradise," and was not easily accessible to their enemies. But it has been mentioned in the second Fargard of the Vendidad that fatal winters fell on this happy land which was consequently invaded by snow and ice, and thus made

unfit for human habitation. Yima, the ruler of the land, had been previously warned by Ahura Mazda about this impending calamity and advised to remove to another place with "the seeds of sheep and oxen, of men, of dogs, of birds and of red blazing fire"¹ and create a *Vāra* or enclosure there for their protection. Mr. Bal Gangadhar Tilak thinks that Airyana Vaejo was situated in the Arctic region, the climate of which was genial before the advent of the last Glacial epoch about 10,000 years ago, and the destruction of this happy land was caused by the invasion of snow and ice when that epoch came.² He is further of opinion "that the Airyana Vaejo was so situated that the inhabitants of Yima's *Vāra* therein regarded the year only as a day, and saw the sun rise only once a year."³ This, according to him, points to the situation of Airyana Vaejo in the Arctic region. The *Vāra* was undoubtedly situated in the Arctic or the Circumpolar region, because the year there was only a day, and the sun rose only once a year. But where is the evidence to show that these were also the physical phenomena and characteristics of Airyana Vaejo? When Ahura Mazda first informed Yima about the impending calamity that was to overtake his country, and advised him to remove to the *Vāra* with the seeds of birds, beasts, men and the blazing fire, the latter naturally asked Ahura Mazda: "O Maker of the material world, thou Holy One! What lights are there to give light in the *Vāra* which Yima made?" Ahura Mazda answered: "There are uncreated lights and created lights. There the stars, the moon and the sun are only once (a year) seen to rise and set, and a year seems as a day."⁴ These, then, were the physical characteristics of the *Vāra* whither Yima was advised to go, and not of Airyana Vaejo, as wrongly concluded by Mr. Tilak. The physical characteristics of the *Vāra* were

¹ Darmesteter.

² Tilak's *Arctic Home in the Vedas*, p. 381.

³ *Ibid.* p. 383.

⁴ Darmesteter.

so entirely different from those of Airyana Vaejo that Ahura Mazda had to take the trouble of mentioning them *in extenso* for Yima's enlightenment. If they were similar to those of Airyana Vaejo, he would have said so very briefly without going into details. Then, again, if the Vāra were situated within Airyana Vaejo, the mere creation of an enclosure would not have saved it from the invasion of Ice that overtook the whole country. If there be any truth in this story, the fact probably was that Yima migrated from Airyana Vaejo to the Circumpolar region, the climate of which was genial in the Interglacial period, and there created an enclosure for the protection of his beasts and men, not against the invasion of Ice, but of indigenous savages. As regards Airyana Vaejo which we believe to have been situated either on the tableland of Pamir and Khokand, or in the farthest east of the Iranian plateau, it remains for us to explain how it was destroyed by the invasion of Ice and made unfit for human habitation. Mr. Tilak says: "It seems that the Indian story of the deluge refers to the same catastrophe as is described in the Avesta, and not to any real deluge, or rain. For though the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa mentions only a flood (*aughah*), the word *prāleya*, which Pāṇini (vii. 3. 2) derives from *pralaya* (a deluge), signifies 'snow,' 'frost,' or 'ice' in the later Sanskrit literature. This indicates that the connection of ice with the deluge was not originally unknown to the Indians, though in later times it seems to have been entirely overlooked."¹ Though this explanation is very ingenious, it cannot be gainsaid that the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa speaks distinctly of a *flood*, over which Manu was conveyed in a *ship* which was piloted by a *great fish* to a peak of the "Northern mountain" (the Himālaya). Now this flood, as we have more than once said before, was probably caused by the sudden upheaval of the bed of the Rajputana Sea by a seismic action of great intensity, and the displaced waters must have covered Sapta-Sindhu, thereby creating a flood. These waters in the course

¹ *Arctic Home in the Vedas*, p. 387.

of drying up or subsiding must have generated vast volumes of vapours which, having been carried over the Himālaya, were precipitated on the high altitudes as snow. Airyana Vaejo, having been situated either on the Pamir or the Iranian plateau, must have been thus invaded by snow and ice, which caused severe winters to fall on the land, and made it uninhabitable either for men or beasts. The occurrence of an extensive and destructive *flood* in Sapta-Sindhu, and the invasion of Airyana Vaejo by *ice*, would thus be simultaneous events, without being identical, as Mr. Tilak supposes them to be. It has been related in the first Fargard of the Vendidad that Angra Mainyn, the destroyer, destroyed, in opposition to the creation of Ahura Mazda, the genial climate of Airyana Vaejo, by bringing in severe winter; and he also destroyed the genial climate of Hapta-Hendu by bringing in "pernicious heat." Now, it is a geological fact that the drying up of the Rajputana Sea, and the creation of an extensive desert in its place affected the climate of Sapta-Sindhu and made it excessively hot and dry. Similarly the precipitation of vast quantities of snow on the tops and valleys of the Himālaya, caused by the vapours of the displaced waters of the above-named sea, changed the climate of Airyana Vaejo, and ushered in long and severe winters. These coincidences undoubtedly go to prove the contiguity of the two countries. Mr. Tilak's contention, therefore, that Airyana Vaejo was situated in the Arctic region has no substantial basis to stand upon.

I admit, however, that the Vāra, to which Yima removed with his men and beasts, was situated somewhere in the Circumpolar region, probably in the north of Russia, where a genial climate prevailed in the pre-Glacial epoch. As Yima could not migrate to the south, in which direction was situated Sapta-Sindhu, inhabited by the enemies of his people, he was directed by Ahura Mazda to proceed to the north, either by crossing the Central Asian Sea, if the sea had existed in those days, or by land, if the sea had disappeared by that

time. And this he did by leading his colony of men and beasts to North Russia. This fact of Iranian colonization of North Russia in some remote age is proved by linguistic evidence also, to which I will now briefly refer.

As early as 1851, in his edition of the *Germania* of Tacitus, Dr. Latham stated that Lithuanian is closely related to Sanskrit and no less archaic. The connection between Greek and Indo-Iranian has been established by Grassmann, Benfey, Sonne and Kern. Again, Schmidt, Ascoli, Leskien and Miklosich have proved the connection between Indo-Iranian and Slavonic. It has been ascertained that the affinities of the Indo-Iranians with the European Aryans are chiefly with the Slavs on the one hand, and with the Greeks on the other.¹ Schmidt also showed "that the more geographically remote were any two of the Aryan languages, the fewer were the peculiarities they possessed in common. Thus while there are fifty-nine words and roots peculiar to Slavo-Lithuanian and Teutonic, and sixty-one to Slavo-Lithuanian and Indo-Iranian, only thirteen are peculiar to Indo-Iranian and Teutonic. Again, while one hundred and thirty-two words and roots are peculiar to Latin and Greek, and ninety-nine to Greek and Indo-Iranian, only twenty are peculiar to Indo-Iranian and Latin. Hence Slavonic forms the transition between Teutonic and Iranian, and Greek the transition between Latin and Sanskrit."² This clearly shows that a branch of the Iranians must have migrated from Iran to Russia, and this migration is proved by Yima's leaving Airyana Vaejo for the Vára in the Circumpolar region, when the former was destroyed by ice and snow. Subsequently, the climate of Airyana Vaejo must have changed to make it possible for the Prophet Zarathushtra and his followers to settle in that country, when the latter were finally expelled from Sapta-Sindhu by the Vedic Aryans.

¹ *The Origin of the Aryans*, pp. 20-22.

² *Ibid*, pp. 35-36.

The connection of the Iranians with the Slavs is further proved by certain words which are common to the languages of both these branches of the Aryan race. "Slavo-Lettic," says Dr. Taylor, "agrees with Indo-Iranian in the designation of the supreme deity, Bagu (Sansk. and Iran. *Bhaga*), in the word for marriage, and in several numerals; and also in two cases of the noun, four forms of the verb, and certain forms of the pronoun....Iranian, Greek, and Slavonic, change *s* into *h* between two vowels, and Iranian and Greek replaces an initial *s* by *h*." ¹ Elsewhere he says:—"In the Slavonic languages, *Bogu* denotes the supreme deity. The word is found in the R̥gveda as *Bhaga*, which means the distributor of gifts, especially of food, and is used as an epithet of the gods, and also, seemingly, as the name of a subordinate deity. In the Avesta the word has attained a larger significance, and is applied as an epithet to Mithra and also to Ahura Mazda, who is called *Bhaga-Bhagánám*, God of gods. The word only became the name of the supreme deity among the Slavs, and among the closely related Phrygians." ² We need not adduce further proofs of the close connection of the Iranians with the Slavs. But some European savants have inferred from this the origin of the Aryans in Europe, and assert that the Indo-Iranians emigrated from Europe into Asia. We will discuss this subject in greater details in a subsequent chapter. All that we now say is that this theory is untenable in the face of the evidence we have adduced about the emigration of the Iranians from Sapta-Sindhu, their original home, into Airyana Vaejo, and thence into Europe.

It is just possible, however, that the colony led by Yima was not the first to go. Other tribes of this branch of the Aryans had emigrated long ago into Europe, along with the half-savage nomadic tribes of the race, who had been com-

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 271.

² *Ibid.*, p. 318.

pelled to quit Sapta-Sindhu in consequence of their persecution by the more advanced Vedic Aryans. The route of their march lay through Western Asia and Southern Europe, as their linguistic affinity with the Greeks on the one hand, and the Phrygians on the other, abundantly testifies. Some of these savage tribes must have been the ancestors of the Phrygians, the Slavs and the Lithuanians; while others were the ancestors of the Greeks and the Celts. The Teutons were the mixed products of these nomadic Aryan tribes and the dolicho-cephalic savages known as the Canstattis or Neanderthals, to whom they imparted such culture as they possessed. This culture, however, was of the lowest order, as is evidenced by the fact that Europe, though Aryanised in early prehistoric times, remained in the neolithic stage of development till even comparatively recent times.

We may conclude this chapter by pointing out that the immigration of Yima to Vára in the Circumpolar region in the pre-Glacial period points to the vast antiquity of the Indo-Aryan civilisation, as the Iranians had long before this event left Sapta-Sindhu, and settled in Airyana Vaejo in consequence of religious dissensions. The upheaval of the bed of the Rajputana Sea, and the invasion of Airyana Vaejo by Ice, if these events were at all simultaneous, must have taken place, as we have pointed out in a previous chapter, long after the composition of the R̥gveda which does not contain any reference to the Flood or the Ice-Deluge. This also goes to establish the vast antiquity of the R̥gveda itself.

CHAPTER XI.

THE PAṆIS OF SAPTA-SINDHU, THEIR EXPANSION IN WESTERN ASIA AND THEIR INFLUENCE ON SEMITIC, EGYPTIAN AND GREEK CIVILISATIONS.

The Paṇis have been mentioned more than once in the previous chapters. We have shown that they were Aryans, belonging to the trading class, who traded not only on land but also by sea, and were notorious for their avarice and money-grabbing spirit that made them highly unpopular with the cultured Aryans. They were a community by themselves, selfish, narrow-minded, intent only on their own business and gain, and seldom coming in contact with the high culture and speculative thoughts of their advanced neighbours. They did not perform the same sacrifice, nor worship the same Gods as the cultured Aryans did, which made them incur their displeasure, nay, hatred. They lived on the eastern sea-coast of Sapta-Sindhu, on the banks of the Gangā, and were famous builders of ships, for the construction of which they procured suitable timbers from the Himālaya, which probably were brought down the stream in floats. Though hated and persecuted by the Vedic Aryans, they probably continued to live in Sapta-Sindhu as long as their route over the sea remained open. It was only when the Rajputana Sea disappeared and cut them off from the outer world that they probably thought of abandoning their native home in search of a land that would give a free scope to their trading and sea-roving propensities. Those that remained in the country gradually became incorporated into the Vedic Aryan society, and became the ancestors of the Vapiks of later times, who formed the third twice-born caste, known as the Vaiśya caste. Even in later Sanskrit Lexicons, the Vapiks came to be identified with the *Paṇikas* who were no other than the Paṇis of R̥gvedic times.¹ That

¹ *R̥ja-Nirghanta*: वैश्यास्तु अवधत्ता विद् वाणिजः पणिको पणिकः ।

the word *Vaṇik* was derived from the R̥gvedic word *Pasi* or the Sanskrit word *Papika*, goes without saying. The latter word is still traceable in the Sanskrit words *paṇya* (merchandise), and *āpaṇa* or *bīpaṇi* meaning the place where articles of trade are sold. Originally, *paṇya* must have meant those articles only, in which the Panis principally traded; but afterwards it came to mean any article of trade.

If the upheaval of the Rajputana Sea was due to the great seismic disturbance that caused the dismemberment of the Indo-Oceanic Continent, separating and isolating its remnants from one another, the present configuration of the coasts of Southern India must be dated to that time. The Panis, in their search of a sea-coast for establishing a new colony, would, therefore, naturally first select the coasts of modern Gujarat for this purpose. And very probably they did settle there for sometime. But as they combined in themselves the functions of both traders and ship-builders, and as Gujarat was probably poor in timber, they must have moved along the western coasts of the Deccan Peninsula in search of a suitable land that would, in the first place, supply them with suitable timber for ship-building, in the second, afford their ships a safe harbour, and in the third, give them sufficient scope for trade and expansion. The narrow strip of land between the mountain range, known as the Western Ghats, and the sea, did not answer and satisfy all their requirements. It is true that Southern India is rich in Indian teak which grows in abundance and affords excellent material for ship-building; but, in many places, the mountains rise, as it were, from the very bosom of the sea whose breakers dash up against their sides in fury, and make safe navigation impossible along the coasts. The Panis must, therefore, have moved further south till they came to the Malabar coast which was not only rich in timber,¹ but also afforded safe

¹ "This particular tree (the Indian teak) is to be located with more than ordinary accuracy: it grows in Southern India (Dekhan) where it advances close to the Malabar coast, and nowhere else; there is none north of the Vindhya." Ragosin's *Vedic India*, p. 205.

harbours to their ships. Rounding the island of Ceylon which was probably in those days connected with the mainland, they must have come also to the Coromondal coast which answered their purpose equally well for planting a colony.

It is also probable that some of the Paṇis finding the sea-route closed by the upheaval of the bed of the Rajputana Sea, sailed with their ships from the eastern coast of Sapta-Sindhu down the sea then occupying the Gangetic trough, and passing out into the Bay of Bengal through the passage caused by the depression of the range connecting the Rajmahal Hills with the mountains of Assam, navigated along the eastern coast of the Southern Peninsula till they found safe harbour on the Coromondal coast where they settled. In these regions as well as on the coasts of Malabar, they came in contact with the aboriginal tribes of the Dravidian race, *vis.*, the Cholas on the Coromondal coast, and the Pāṇdyas on the Malabar coast. The Paṇis must have freely mixed with them and imparted to them some of their culture, in as much as of all the Dravidian tribes, we find the Pāṇdyas, the Cholas and the Keralas or Cheralas to be the most advanced in ancient times, and playing important parts in the early history of the Southern Peninsula. But they must have been wild savages at first, like the Puliers, the Munda-
vers, or the Juangs of the present day. It was only when they came in contact with the Paṇis that they probably first learnt the arts of civilisation and became advanced peoples. They must have learnt from them not only the use of iron, but also the arts of agriculture, ship-building and architecture and the process of irrigation by means of canals. "The Cholas," says Mr. Krishnaswami Aiyangar,— "were great builders of not only cities and temples...but also of useful irrigation works. ... That they maintained an efficient fleet is borne out by references to the destruction of the Chera fleet at Kandatur placed on the west coast by Dr. Hultzsch...Ancient Tamil literature is full of details and descriptions of the sailing craft of those

days. They also show abundant evidence of nautical experience by the figures and tropes made use of in the works. To give only an instance, the author of the *Epic of the Anklet* refers to beacon-lights being placed on the tops of palmyra trunks in lamps made of fresh clay...on dark nights when the sea was rough."¹ These descriptions undoubtedly relate to facts of comparatively recent times. But there can be no doubt that the later civilisation of the Cholas came down to them from hoary antiquity, and our readers need not therefore be surprised if they are told that it was imparted to them first of all by the Pāṇis. The very fact that the Pāṇis were renowned ship-builders in ancient times leads us to surmise that the Cholas learnt the art of ship-building from them, as well as the arts of agriculture and irrigation by means of canals. These latter they might also have learnt from the other Aryan tribes that settled in Southern India after the drying up of the Rajputana Sea; but the art of ship-building could only have been imparted to them by the Pāṇis, unless we suppose that they learnt it in the natural course of their own evolution. But this supposition can only be based on the further supposition that the Cholas and the Pāṇdyas were the inhabitants of the sea-coasts of the lost Indo-Oceanic Continent from time immemorial. If the Malabar and the Coromondal coasts were their original homes, very likely these regions formed parts of inland provinces of the lost continent, and the sea was far-off from these places. In such a case, their natural evolution as sea-faring peoples from very early times would be impossible. It was only when the sea was brought near to its present position that they would think of constructing crafts for navigating it, if, of course, they were sufficiently advanced in civilisation to do so—a supposition which is not supported by the savage condition of the other allied tribes who were their neighbours, and some of whom are still in the

¹ *Aiyangar's Ancient India* p. 185.

primitive stage of civilisation. But if the dismemberment of the Indo-Oceanic Continent was synchronous with the disappearance of the Rajputana Sea, then the necessity that the Papis felt for founding a colony on the new sea-coasts would naturally bring them to the Malabar and the Coromondal coasts, and into contact with the original inhabitants thereof. For these reasons, my surmise is that the Cholas and the Pāṇdyas were uplifted and civilised by the Papis first of all, and this surmise is strengthened by the subsequent history of these tribes, which will be related later on.

It is probable that the Papis afterwards emigrated from the coasts of Gujarat, and the Malabar and the Coromondal coasts to those of the Persian Gulf and established a colony near the mouths of the Tigris and the Euphrates. Though thus removed far away from their mother-land, they must have kept up an intercourse with her coasts for a long time, mainly in the interest of their trade. The immigrants to Mesopotamia, however, appear to have left their new colony, probably after a long sojourn, not only because it was very poor in timber suitable for ship-building, but also because they must have been ousted from occupation by the invasion of the Semitic hordes.

Herodotus says that the Phœnicians "formerly dwelt, as they themselves say, on the coasts of the Erythræan Sea. From thence, they passed transversely across Syria, and now dwell on the sea-shore" (of the Mediterranean). Now, this Erythræan Sea was a common designation of the sea that modern Geographers call by the name of the Arabian Sea which, with all its gulfs, washes the shores of Arabia, Persia, Baluchistan and Western India. If the Phœnicians asserted that they had immigrated to Phœnicia from the shores of the Erythræan Sea, there could be no doubt that they believed that their ancestors had been immediate immigrants from the shores of the Persian Gulf. But some modern European scholars are loath to place any credence in this

ancient tradition and to locate their original home on these shores, mainly on the ground that they were, as they still are, poor in suitable woods for ship-building, and could not therefore have afforded any scope for the rise of a maritime people. As a writer says: "As a matter of fact, these particular regions which have been specially represented as the primitive home of the Phœnicians, namely, the Babylonian coasts of the Persian Gulf and those which lie to the west of them, are so little qualified to favour the rise of navigation, owing to the want of suitable woods that, as Aristobulus informs us, when Alexander the Great conceived the idea of bringing the coast district of Eastern Arabia under his dominion, both seamen and portable ready-made ships had to be brought from Phœnioia to Babylon, and this was actually done with the express intention of making of Babylonia what it had never hitherto been, namely a second Phœnicia." ¹

These observations would be eminently just, if these Babylonian sea-coasts were represented to be "the primitive home" of the Phœnicians. But, as our readers have already been told, if the Phœnicians of history were the descendants of the Panis of R̥gvedic times, their "primitive home" would be, as it certainly was, in Sapta-Sindhu, from which they emigrated to the coasts of Gujarat, and the Malabar and the Coromondal coasts, and thence to the coasts of Babylonia. The last-named region, however, not favouring their rise as a maritime people on account of the paucity of suitable woods, they were compelled to leave them in search of a more suitable country which they at last found in Phœnicia on the shores of the Mediterranean Sea. It would thus appear that Herodotus faithfully jotted down the tradition that had been current among the Phœnicians in his time, and it would indeed be unjust to summarily dismiss it with a view to establish the theory of their original home in Syria.

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. II, p. 262

The same writer says: "It is in itself probable that they were originally native not to Phœnicia but to some place further south, and in the interior of Palestine; but not because we have information to that effect, but solely on account of the outlying position of their settlements, representing the most northerly extent of territory of the Canaanites. Amongst the peoples of antiquity, the Phœnician is not the only one which must not be regarded as autochthonous, although all the accounts of their immigration which we possess are unworthy of credit." ¹ An argument like this, we need hardly say, is far from convincing.

The tradition of their immigration from the coasts of Eastern Arabia and Babylonia through Syria to Phœnicia seems to us to indicate one of the real lines of their march, and furnishes the reason of their movement. Phœnicia was an ideal country for a maritime people like the Papis to live in and prosper. "Phœnicia proper, even in the most flourishing state, was one of the smallest countries of antiquity. It comprised that part of the Syrian coast extending from Akko to Aradus (Arvad),—a narrow strip of land about two hundred miles in length from north to south, and probably nowhere more than thirty-five miles in width. This short line of coast, rich in bays and harbours, was covered with lofty mountains, many of which ran out into the sea, and formed promontories, and whose heights, covered with forests, supplied the most valuable material in the construction of the fleets and habitations of the Phœnicians...The sea which broke with great fury upon this rocky shore had probably separated some of these promontories from the main-land, forming little islands at a small distance from the shore, which are not less worthy of note than the mainland itself, being everywhere covered with extensive colonies and flourishing cities." ²

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. II, p. 162.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. II, p. 255.

Here, then, did the Phœnicians find a suitable country to live in, that satisfied all their requirements as a sea-faring people. But this immigration was made long long after their leaving Sapta-Sindhu, which must have taken place several thousand years ago, and of which they had only a vague tradition. In the course of their wanderings and settlements in various lands, they intermingled with the native populations, and could not, therefore, retain the pristine purity of their Aryan blood, but were transformed into an altogether new people neither purely Aryan, nor purely Semitic, nor Turanian. Their speech also underwent a thorough change, but like the Tamil-speaking Aryans of Southern India, they could not help retaining some words of Sanskrit origin, and the names of some of the Gods whom their forefathers had worshipped in Sapta-Sindhu.

European scholars regard the Phœnicians as a race not separated from the rest of the Canaanites, especially from the various elements of the pre-Israelite population of Palestine. They regard their history as "only that of a section of the Canaanite race, the history of that portion which, as far back as the times to which the earliest historical information concerning this territory refers, had fixed its abode not in the interior of Palestine but on the edge of the sea...Although in the matter of descent no difference can be discovered between them and the other Canaanites, *historical science must, nevertheless, regard them as a different people.* It is in this sense that they are spoken of as a Phœnician race, the Phœnician people."¹ This looks like a tardy and halting admission of the fact that though the Phœnicians resembled the Canaanites in many respects, there was something in their character and genius, which was distinctly their own, and distinguished them from the rest.

In the opinion of eminent geologists, Phœnicia was an inhabited country at some wholly pre-historic period long

¹ *Ibid*, Vol. II, pp. 259-260.

before the first appearance of the Semitic race in that land. "It is in no way probable that when the Phœnicians chose the low lands on the west side of the Lebanon Chain as their place of abode, they took possession of a tract of country which had as yet practically no population. But we have not the slightest grounds for guessing the stage of civilisation of the predecessors whom they encountered there, nor to what race these belonged. Certain scholars have indeed sought to answer the question why it was in Phœnicia that in early times a much higher development of civilisation appeared than in most of the other countries inhabited by members of the Semitic family of peoples, by the hypothesis that the branch of Semites that immigrated there found, as did those who settled in Babylonia, *a population entirely different in endowments and descent*, who had long been in possession of a manifold civilisation; with these they may have intermingled, and from the complete amalgamation first proceeded that section of humanity, which bears in history the name of Phœnicians. This hypothesis has no other foundation than the idea that otherwise it would be necessary to attribute to a Semitic people qualities which are denied to the Semitic family generally."¹

But, as we have seen, the above hypothesis has a more solid foundation than a mere idea, which, however, for obvious reasons, the writer has failed to notice; and it really explains the origin of the Phœnicians of history, who were the product of an amalgamation of a highly civilised people of a different family, inhabiting the sea-coast, and the Semites who immigrated there subsequently. The amalgamation became so complete that the Semitic type ultimately predominated in the race, and hence they are usually called a Semitic people. It is needless to say here that the original people whom the Semitic immigrants found on the sea-coast in a high state of civilisation were no other than the Papis of

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. II, pp. 263-264.

Vedic India, who had ultimately settled there after their long sojourn in various lands, the last being the shores of the Persian Gulf. This would clearly explain why the civilisation of the Phœnicians was more highly developed than that of the other sections of the Semitic family.

The Panis, while settling on the fertile plains near the mouths of the Tigris and the Euphrates, must have found the original inhabitants in an extremely savage and wild state, not knowing the use of agriculture, or any of the arts that help men to advance on the path of civilisation. It was the Panis who first lighted up the torch of culture among them, and reclaimed them from barbarism. It can therefore be asserted that the civilisation of Western Asia was first born on the shores of the Persian Gulf, from which it gradually spread northwards. A writer says: "It is pure supposition to say that civilisation in Babylonia started out from the shores of the Persian Gulf, and spread from there towards the north, but it is *a supposition which has a high degree of probability*. In this direction points the old legend of Babylonians, as Berossus relates it, which describes the origin of civilisation in the legend of the divine fish-man Oannes (or Musarus Oannes) who came up in the morning from the Erythræan Sea, instructed the inhabitants of Chaldea, who were still living like animals, in the arts and sciences, and then in the evening, disappeared under the waves. This fish-god has long since been recognised as the god who is so frequently depicted on Babylonian and Assyrian monuments, and it can now hardly be longer doubted that he, the god of waters, or rather the source of light and fire in the waters, is the god Ea. This god with his circle is without doubt indigenous to Southern Chaldea.....Thus if legend traces the culture of the Chaldeans from the instruction of this god, this is the origin of the tradition that *his worshippers, who must have been mariners and dwellers on the sea-coast, introduced this civilisation into Chaldea.*"¹

¹ *Ibid*, Vol. I, p. 535.

This fish-man, as has been suggested in the above extract, was undoubtedly the leader or deity of those ancient mariners who visited the coasts of the Persian Gulf and helped to spread civilisation among the aboriginal savages, who regarded their teachers more as denizens of the deep than landmen like themselves, as they probably used to live, while reconnoitering the sea-coasts for a suitable settlement, in their ships that must have been anchored in the sea far out of sight of the aboriginal population. Hence they were called fish-men, and their leader or deity the fish-god. Now it was to the interest of these mariners to civilize the natives in order that they might settle down and prosper in this new country without being molested by them. They all, therefore, set themselves to this task, and were successful in their effort.

These early mariners could have been no others than the Papis of Sapta-Sindhu who traded along the coasts of the Erythrean Sea, and were afterwards compelled to leave their original home in search of countries for planting colonies therein. And this supposition is strengthened by the following observation made by the same English writer as I have quoted above:—"The people who brought its culture to the southern coasts of Babylonia, and probably also to the coasts of Elam, and communicated it to the still uncultured races living there, seems to have belonged to that *peaceful commercial race which the Hebrews designated as the 'Sons of Kush,'¹ which was not unlike the Phœnicians and was placed in the same category; a race which, while jealous of*

¹ In the Pauranic literature of the Hindus, mention has been made of a country named *Kush* or *Kusha-dvīpa*, which is identified by some with Southern India or Australia, and by others with Africa. Probably it was applied to the whole Indo-Oceanic continent. The "sons of Kush" therefore might mean the peoples of the Southern Continent whose remnants were Southern India, Burma, East or South Africa, and Australia. As the Papis came from the coasts of Southern India, they would rightly be called "the sons of Kush."

its independence, was not aggressive, although inclined to colonisation, and to making distant journeys."¹

There can, therefore, be no doubt about the identity of the people who first brought their culture to Babylonia. They were the Phœnicians, or *people like them*, who could not but be the Papis of Sapta-Sindhu. The characteristics of the race as described above fully agree with those of the Papis. These peaceful settlers after a long sojourn in Babylonia were, as we have already said, compelled to leave the country partly on account of the absence of materials for ship-building, and partly for political reasons, as the country was invaded and conquered by the turbulent and uncivilised Semites; and they marched northwards by the overland route through Syria to the coasts of Lebanon, where they settled again to their occupations which, however, were not altogether peaceful, and called their new colony Phœnicia.

Julius Africanus, a Christian Chronographer who wrote in the first quarter of the third century A.D., mentions incidentally that there were versions of Phœnician history, in which the latter was made to go back no less than 30,000 years.² Though this is regarded as incredible by European savants, there may be an element of truth in this computation. Their sojourn to Babylonia and Western Asia from the shores of Southern India was made in pre-historic times which must have been several thousand years before the Christian Era, if not exactly 30,000 years, as mentioned by Julius Africanus.

The long contact of the Papis with the Dravidians, the aborigines of Babylonia, and the Semites, and their complete separation from the Vedic Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu, the parent stock from which they were descended, wrought a thorough change in their language, manners, and modes of life, though

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 536.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. II, p. 264.

from a conservative instinct they retained the names of and worshipped some of the Vedic Gods. "The Phœnician religion was of a distinctively natural type. The active and the passive forces of Nature were symbolised by male and female deities, as in Egypt, but the Phœnician Gods were more definitely associated with the heavenly bodies than the Egyptian."¹ In the Phœnician cosmogony, the beginning of all things was a moving and limitless chaos of utter darkness. After the lapse of ages, this agitated air became enamoured of its own first principles, and from this embrace was generated Mot, which some interpret mud, (Sanskrit *Mṛit*), and others the putrefaction of a watery mixture. From this the universe came forth, first living creatures without sensation, then intelligent beings in shape like an egg. From this, too, the sun, moon and stars were evolved; and the heat and light generated clouds, winds and rain.² The principal divinity of the Phœnicians was Baal or the Sun, and this name came to be equivalent to the Supreme God, in which sense it was more frequently used than with reference to his original character of Sun-God. Another name of the Sun was *Ouranus* which is the same as the Vedic Varuṇa.

From the above brief account, it would appear that the Phœnicians retained a mutilated form of Ṛgvedic cosmogony, and were Nature-worshippers like the Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu, their principal deities being Baal, the Sun-god, and *Ouranus* or Varuṇa. Now this god Baal or Vala is also mentioned in the Ṛgveda, and identified with the Sun. The *Ṛbhus*, whom Śāyana identifies with solar rays, were the sons of Vala or Baal (Rv. iv. 33, 34, 35, 36 and 37). Fire also was called a son of Vala (Rv. iv. 18). The Paṇis of Sapta-Sindhu, under the leadership of Bṛbu, were the votaries of the *Ṛbhus*. The Phœnicians worshipped a god named *Reschuf*, which word, for aught we know, may be a corruption of

¹ *Ibid*, Vol. II, p. 350.

² *Ibid*, Vol. II, p. 349.

the Vedic word *Ṛbhu*. As the *Paṇis* were opposed to the worship of Indra, and were, therefore put down by the *Ṛg*-vedic Aryans as *Asuras* or unbelievers, the name of their God *Baal*, although it represented the Sun-god, came to be identified with *Vṛtra* who stole the cows and oppressed the gods. (*Rv.* i. 11, 5). The *Paṇis* also were notorious cattle-lifters in ancient *Sapta-Sindhu*, as we have already seen in the legend of *Sarama* and the *Paṇis*, and we need not be surprised if their God also was identified with *Vṛtra* who stole cows (rain-clouds or solar rays) and kept them imprisoned in his dark cave. In the land of their sojourn in Western Asia, however, the *Paṇis* having probably become more degenerated in consequence of their contact with savage peoples, became worse than cattle-lifters. They not only bought slaves at ridiculously low prices but kidnapped men, women and children from the neighbouring countries. "These spoilers hunted the coasts and harbours of Phœnicia, Asia Minor and Syria, and either exacted a high ransom from the relatives of their captives, or sold them in the public slave-markets. During the most prosperous period of the slave-trade, we find the Phœnician slave-dealers everywhere, even on the fields of battle, where they followed the fortunes of war as peddlers and purveyors. The booty which fell into the hands of the soldiers was at once purchased by these traffickers, and the little children and women, whose transport would have been difficult, were sold to them at a very low price, or exchanged for wine or some other commodity valued by the soldiers. The beautiful women and boys of Greece had from early times been introduced into the East as slaves. In Homeric times they commanded a higher price than any other commodity, and they were brought by Phœnician pirates as prisoners of war to Egypt and Palestine."¹

The Phœnicians, in the time of Homer, "visited the Greek islands and the coasts of the continent as robbers or

¹ *Ibid*, Vol. II, pp. 344-345.

merchants, according as circumstances offered. They came with trinkets, beads and baubles, which they sold at a high price to the inexperienced and unwary Greeks ; and they thus gained opportunities of kidnapping their boys and girls, whom they turned to good account in the Asiatic slave-markets, or who were redeemed at heavy ransoms by their parents and countrymen. A most faithful and lively picture of the state of society in these respects is drawn by the Greek bard himself in the narrative which he makes Eumæus relate of his birth and early adventures."¹

It would thus appear that they became worse pests in Western Asia and Southern Europe than they had been in Sapta-Sindhu. It was no wonder, therefore, that the God Baal, whom the Phœnicians worshipped came to be looked upon by the Vedic Aryans as a dark malevolent deity like Vṛtra, for it was natural to believe that the character of the votaries of a particular God was moulded and influenced by that of the God himself.

The name of *Ouranus* which was also applied to Baal by the Phœnicians is, as we have said, clearly traceable to the Vedic *Varuṇa* ; and this name represented one of the oldest gods of the Aryans, being an *Āditya* or Sun-god, though more correctly speaking, the Sun of Night, and also the Lord of the Ocean.' The worship of Baal was introduced by the Papis into their first settlement on the coasts of the Persian Gulf, where also it became a principal deity among the ancient Babylonians and Assyrians.

"In religious doctrine they were more receptive than productive.....Instead of continuing through free speculation what is understood, or impressing an idiosyncratic national stamp on what was foreign, they reduced the fundamental elements to a complicated convolution of ideas, devoid of clear forms or ethical foundations. As their life was so permeated with the mercantile spirit, they placed their divini-

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. II, p. 330.

ties in direct relation with appearances of practical experience, and desecrated the deep doctrines by material significations, by lasciviousness and by cruel practices."¹ This is a most faithful description of their character that made them so unpopular with the Vedic Aryans.

Of their cruel practices, one may be mentioned here, *vis.*, the practice of human sacrifice. On the occasion of any extraordinary calamity, an unusual number of victims was sacrificed, but human sacrifice was also part of the established ritual, and every year a youthful victim was chosen by lot. "Infants were burnt alive, and the most acceptable of all sacrifices was that of an only child. The image of Saturn was brass, the outstretched hands were hollowed so as to receive the body of the child, which slid thence to a fiery receptacle below. Mothers brought their infants in their arms, and quieted them by caresses till the moment they were thrown into the flames, since any manifestation of reluctance would have rendered the sacrifice unacceptable to the God."² If the Papis practised this cruel custom in Sapta-Sindhu also, we should not wonder at the strong hatred the Vedic Aryans felt towards them and their religion.

But with all their faults, draw-backs, and shortcomings, the Papis, or Phœnicians as we should now call them, are credited with helping the advancement of civilisation in the ancient Western world to a very large extent. It is a strange dispensation of God that both in the olden and modern times, the selfish and greedy merchants should be selected for the outspread of a particular civilisation in other lands. As the European merchants have paved the way for the spread of Western culture in Eastern lands, so did the Papis also help to spread the culture of the East in Western countries in ancient times. Of course, none were actuated by altruistic motives or a missionary spirit to undertake this noble task. But their

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol II, p. 354.

² *Hist. Hist. of the World*, *Ibid*, Vol. II, p. 351.

inordinate love of gain and restless spirit of adventure took them far away from their homes, and brought them into contact with different peoples in different climes, who could not help imbibing some of their culture as well as their vices. It is probably thus that God fulfils himself in History.

To sum up: The Papis, after leaving Sapta-Sindhu through sheer necessity arising out of adverse circumstances, first settled down on the coasts of Southern India among the Cholas and the Papdyas who could not help imbibing a portion of their culture and spirit of adventure. Thence they proceeded towards the coasts bordering on the Persian Gulf, followed by the Cholas, and settled there for a pretty long time, keeping up a close and constant communication with the sea-coasts of Southern India, and imparting such culture to the aboriginal inhabitants of their new colony as was calculated to make them friendly and helpful, instead of antagonistic to the principal vocation of their life, *vis.*, trade. When subsequently this colony was invaded by the strong, though comparatively uncivilised Semites, the Papis not finding the country any longer congenial to the successful pursuit of their vocation, moved on towards the north and settled down on the sea-coast of Syria, which they called Phœnicia, or the Land of the Papis or Papikas. This land furnishing them with full facilities for trading in the islands of the Greek Archipelago, Southern Europe and Northern Africa, and for manufacturing articles of trade with the help of the vast number of slaves whom they captured or bought at nominal prices, the Papis soon became a prosperous and powerful people, founding colonies in the islands of the Mediterranean and on the coasts of Northern Africa. Carthage was a Phœnician colony and every student of ancient history knows what important parts she played in historic times in Southern and Western Europe. In all the islands and countries where they settled, the original inhabitants coming in contact with them learnt from them the arts of civilised life. They traded by sea as far north as the coast of Great

Britain and ancient Gaul and even Scandinavia, whose original inhabitants also learnt from them the use of the metals and the art of agriculture. In this way the Papis, or the Phœnicians, spread Aryan culture not only among the Semitic peoples of Western Asia and Arabia, but also among the early pre-historic inhabitants of Egypt and of North Africa, and the Greeks, the Romans, the Iberians, the Celts and the Gauls of Europe. Professor Nilsson has attempted to show that the Phœnicians had settlements far up on the northern shores of Norway also, where they spread the worship of their God Baal (*vide* Appendix to this Chapter). It is simply wonderful to contemplate how an Aryan tribe, originally small and insignificant, and driven out of their home for their vicious ways and manners, helped in the course of several thousand years to spread such culture as they possessed over a large portion of the then known world. Having been traders, they were of necessity the first to invent and develop a purely alphabetical script which was afterwards borrowed and improved upon by the Greeks. The Semites also, with their help and that of the Chaldees or Chaldeans whom we shall find in the next chapter to be the Cholas of Southern India, made rapid strides towards progress and founded the famous kingdoms of Babylonia and Assyria, to which also early European civilisation was immensely indebted. The ancient Egyptians also, who are supposed to be an amalgamation of the Punlc race (the Papis), the Pāpdyas of the Malabar coast of Southern India and the prehistoric peoples of the land, developed a civilisation which influenced European civilisation to a very large extent. The Greeks received their culture from the Phœnicians, the Babylonians and the Egyptians, and imparted it to the Romans, and the latter in their turn imparted it to the Iberians, the Celts, the Teutons and the Slavs. But we are afraid that we are anticipating too much in this chapter. The interesting romance of the expansion of Indo-Aryan civilisation from Sapta-Sindhu and the Deccan over Western

Asia, Egypt, Northern Africa and Europe will be told more elaborately in subsequent chapters.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER XI.

Writing about Phœnician influence on Pre-historic Europe, Lord Avebury thus observes in his *Pre-historic Times*, pp. 67-71, (Ed. 1912) :

"We are surely quite justified in concluding that between B. C. 1500 and B. C. 1200 the Phœnicians were already acquainted with the mineral fields of Spain and Britain, and under these circumstances it is, I think, more than probable that they pushed their exploration still farther, in search of other shores as rich in mineral wealth as ours. The amber also, so much valued in ancient times, could not have been obtained from the coast of the German Ocean.

"Professor Nilsson has attempted —...to show that the Phœnicians had settlements far up on the northern shores of Norway. His arguments may be reduced to seven, namely, the small size of the sword-handles, bracelets, etc.; the character of the ornaments on the bronze implements; the engravings in Bronze Age tumuli; the worship of Baal; certain peculiar methods of reaping and fishing; and the use of war-chariots.

"The implements and ornaments of bronze certainly appear to have belonged to a race with smaller hands than those of the present European nations. This indicates an Eastern, but not necessarily a Phœnician origin.

"The ornaments on them are also peculiar, and have, in Professor Nilsson's opinion, a symbolic meaning. Although the great stones in tumuli attributed to the Bronze Age are very seldom ornamented, or even hewn into shape, still there are some few exceptions, one of these being the remarkable monument near Kivik in Christianstad. From the general character of the engravings, Professor Nilsson has no hesitation in referring this tumulus to the Bronze Age, and on two of the stones are representations of human figures, which may fairly be said to have a Phœnician or Egyptian appearance.

"On another of the stones an obelisk is represented, which Professor Nilsson regards as symbolical of the Sun-God; and it is certainly remarkable that, in an ancient ruin in Malta characterized by other decorations of the Bronze Age types, a somewhat similar obelisk was discovered; we know also that in many countries Baal, the God of the Phœnicians, was worshipped under the form of a conical stone.

"Nor is this, by any means, the only case in which Professor Nilsson finds traces of Baal worship in Scandinavia. Indeed, the festival of Baal, or Balder, was, he tells us, celebrated on Midsummer's night in Scania, and far up into

Norway, almost to the Lofoden Islands, until within the last fifty years. A wood fire was made upon a hill or mountain, and the people of the neighbourhood gathered together in order, like Baal's prophets of old, to dance round it shouting and singing. This Midsummer's-night fire has even retained in some parts the ancient name of 'Balders-baal' or Balders-fire. Leopold von Buch long ago suggested that this custom could not have originated in a country where at midsummer the sun is never lost sight of, and where, consequently, the smoke only, not the fire, is visible. A similar custom also prevailed until lately in some parts of our islands. Baal has given his name to many Scandinavian localities, as, for instance, the Baltic, the Great and Little Belt, Belteberga, Baleshaugen, Balestranden, etc.

"The ornamentation characteristic of the Bronze Age is, in the opinion of Professor Nilsson, decidedly Semitic rather than Indo-European. He lays considerable stress on two curious 'vase-carriages,' one found in Sweden and one in Mecklenburg, which certainly appear to have been very like the 'vases' made for Solomon's temple, and described in the first Book of Kings. Finally, he believes that the use of war-chariots, the practice of reaping close to the ear, and a certain method of fishing, are all evidences of Phœnician intercourse.

"Professor Nilsson is so great an authority as an archaeologist, and his labours have contributed so much to place the science on a sound basis, that his opinions are deserving of the most careful consideration.....That the Phœnicians have left their traces in Norway is, however, in my opinion all that can fairly be deduced from the facts on which he relies, even if we attributed to them all the significance claimed for them by him... As regards the smallness of hands, we must remember that *Hindoes share this peculiarity with Egyptians*; this character is therefore not less reconcilable with an Indo-European than with a Phœnician origin of the Bronze Age civilisation."

CHAPTER XII.

INDO-ARYAN INFLUENCE ON THE ANCIENT CIVILISATIONS OF BABYLONIA AND ASSYRIA.

In the last chapter, we have related the legend of the Fish-god (Musarus Oannes) who first taught the wild and savage inhabitants of the coasts of the Persian Gulf the rudimentary arts of civilised life. This Fish-god, as we have already said, undoubtedly represented a sea-faring people who visited the coasts in early prehistoric times, and could have been no others than the *Papis* of *Sapta-Sindhu*, and afterwards of the Deccan, for we know of no other people in that dim past, who were sufficiently advanced to undertake sea-voyages. These *Papis*, as we have seen, were the mariners *par excellence* in those ancient days and continued as such down to historical times. We have further seen that leaving India, they first settled down on the fertile coasts of the Persian Gulf as colonists, and were either accompanied or followed by the Cholas. The latter were probably at first pressed into their service as sailors and artisans or husbandmen, and went with their masters to this new colony. Other Cholas, probably hearing excellent reports of the country from those who returned from the voyages, followed the first batch of immigrants and founded a colony of their own. As we have already said, it was undoubtedly to the self-interest of the *Papis* to induce a large number of the Cholas to immigrate and settle in this new colony where, otherwise, they would be in the midst of savages and find no facility for carrying on their trade. The Cholas, having long ago learnt the art of agriculture, naturally felt inclined to settle in this new land where the soil was exceedingly fertile in consequence of the alluvial deposits of the Tigris and the Euphrates near their mouth. As the Cholas had been aryanised, they probably went there with their Gods and Aryan priests, and

called their colony *Choladeta*, which word through corrupted pronunciation, came to be known as Chaldea, *i.e.*, the land of the Cholas. This land was the "Shinar" land of the Semites, and the Babylonia of the Greeks.

Chaldea or Babylonia is a wide plain of rich brown soil, about a hundred miles above the mouth, where the two rivers, the Tigris and the Euphrates, approach most nearly, and the banks touch the so-called Median wall. It seems that the new colonists first settled down in the land of Makan, the district of the mouth of the two rivers, and were known to the early inhabitants as Sumerians, because the tract of land was called Sumer with its capital Ur. The colonists, however, called their settlement Chaldea, and hence were also known by the name of Chaldees or Chaldeans.

"The most ancient population of this country," says a writer in the *Historians' History of the World* (Vol. I, p. 341), "formed several closely related races which had no connection with the other nations of Western Asia; but, in the course of historical evolution, they lost their language and nationality, and were submerged in the neighbouring races."

"It is coming to be a common agreement among Assyriologists," he continues, "that the original peoples of Babylon were of a race that was not Semitic. Just what it was, these scholars are not yet prepared to say; although the inclination of belief is that *it was an Indo-European race and most probably of the Turanian family*. An attempt has recently been made to connect the aborigines with the Urgo-Finnish branch of the Ural-Altaic family, but with what success it is still too soon to say. But whatever these peoples the Sumerians may have been, they occupied the land of Babylonia until dislodged by a great wave of Semitic migration."¹

"That the Sumerians, like the Semites, were not an autochthonous race in Babylonia follows from the condition of the soil which had to be rendered fit for agriculture, and indeed, for

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 342.

human habitation, by a system of canals. Whence, then, did the Sumerians originally come, before they took possession of the swampy Enphrates valley and settled there?"¹

We have already answered this question by asserting at the beginning of this chapter that they were the Cholas of the Coromondal coast of Southern India, who had already become a cultured people under the direct influence of Aryan civilisation, and learnt the art of agriculture by the construction of canals, from which they irrigated their lands. Yet, we shall endeavour to answer it more fully and satisfactorily in this chapter by a careful study of the ancient civilisation of the Sumerians or Chaldeans themselves. Though Professor Joseph Halévy is of opinion that the earliest civilisation of Babylonia was developed by a people of the pure Semitic race, yet, "after a long dispute, carried on chiefly by philologists, it is now generally conceded that the earliest civilisation of Southern Babylonia was due to a non-Semitic people, the Sumerians. To this people, it would seem, must be ascribed the honour of developing the chief features of Mesopotamian civilisation, including the invention of cuneiform system of writing."² It is not at all clear at precisely what time the Semitic people, destined ultimately to become predominant in this region, made their appearance; but "as early as the beginning of the fourth millennium before the Christian Era, the Semitic Babylonians were already settled in northern Babylonia and, as is proved by the Naram-sin inscription and several dating from the time of Sargon, his father (*Circa* 3,800 B. C.), had already acquired the Sumerian character (and, by inference, the Sumerian civilisation). In the case of southern Babylonia, the discoveries at Telloh has put us in possession of a number of sculptures—some of them in relief, others severed heads of statues dating from the period between *Circa* 4,200 B. C. or earlier, and *Circa* 3,000 B. C. These

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I; p. 343.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 337.

present two different types—one is characterised by a rounded head with slightly prominent cheek-bones, always beardless, and usually with clean-shaven crown. To this type certainly belong the representatives of vanquished foes on the archaic sculpture, known as the Vulture Stele, though the primitive method of representing the brow and nose by a single slightly curved line gives a merely superficial resemblance to the Semitic cast of countenance. The other is a longer-skulled (dolichocephalous) type, with thick, black hair, and long, flowing beard.

“ It is certainly by no mere accident that the heads of the Telloh statues, most of which are supposed to represent kings, are of the first-named (Sumerian) type, while the bronze votive offerings, which likewise bear the name of Gudea, are carried, as is evidenced by a glance, by Semites. And as there were Semites among the subjects of Gudea, where the Sumerians were a dominant race, so we find the same Semitic type clearly marked in the figures round the stem of a Vase, while the party of musicians who were seen approaching with submissive gestures on the fragment of a bas-relief, which probably also dates from the reign of Gudea, must likewise be of Semitic-Babylonian descent.

“ Fortunately, ancient Babylonian art gives us the opportunity, not merely of studying the wholly non-Semitic language of the earliest inhabitants of Babylonia in lengthy bilingual original inscriptions such as many of the statues of Gudea bear, but of seeing with our own eyes the bodily semblance of this singular people, and so observing the striking correspondence of non-Semitic elements in speech and facial type. In this connection we would draw attention to an ancient Babylonian statue of a female figure now in the Louvre at Paris. We may confidently assume that the woman represented is a Sumerian, and not a Semitic Babylonian; and it may thus be regarded as a splendid counterpart of the Gudea statues, which by the whole character of workmanship

it calls to mind. Whether we have here a queen or some other lady of high rank (the supposition that she is a goddess appears to be excluded by the absence of the head-dress goddesses are wont to wear) cannot, of course, be determined with certainty. It is only natural that various mixed types should have developed in course of time, especially in northern Babylonia, and many of the faces we meet with—on the seal-cylinders more particularly, may be representations of such.”¹

It is clear from the above long extracts that the Sumerians had been a distinct people from the Semites who afterwards invaded Babylonia and established their supremacy over it, and advancing farther north, founded the kingdom of Assyria. It must, however, be mentioned here that the original home of the Babylonian Semites is set down by orientallists like Eduard Meyer and Sprenger in the desert of Arabia, which, according to them, used to send forth the surplus of her predatory and Bedouin population to the great pastoral districts in the vicinity, that is, to Palestine, the plain of Mesopotamia (Aram), and in times long out of mind, to northern Babylonia also. But this theory has been directly refuted by later investigations set on foot by A. Von Kremer, and followed up by Ign. Guidi at Rome, and lastly by Hommel who thinks that he has succeeded in proving that “the people who afterwards became the Babylonians and Assyrians must have separated from the common stock in some part of Central Asia where the lion was indigenious, and emigrated into northern Babylonia through one of the passes of the Medio-Elamite range, certainly no later than the fifth millennium B.C.” Whatever may be the original home of the Semitic Babylonians, it would be interesting and of great historical importance, if some philologists could clearly establish the identity of the family, to which the non-Semitic language in the bilingual inscriptions on the statues of Gudea

Ibid., Vol. I, pp. 342-343.

belonged. If it be found to have belonged to the Aryan, Dravidian or Dravido-Aryan family, the hypothesis that the Sumerians or Chaldeans came from India would be established on a firm and sound basis, and beyond the shadow of a doubt. It is to be hoped that philologists would direct their earnest attention to make researches in this line, though it must be stated here that, so far, the result of their spasmodic and desultory investigations has established a resemblance between the Sumerian and the Dravidian languages. Be that as it may, "it must be understood that the Sumerians, whatever their precise racial affinities, were a different people from the Semitic races that superseded them. There is reason to believe that they were an essentially creative race, whereas the Semites, and in particular, the Assyrians, were pre-eminently copyists and adapters rather than originators. It would appear that all the chief features of a later Assyrian civilisation were adumbrated, if not indeed fully elaborated in that early day when the Sumerians were dominant in southern Babylonia. Even the cuneiform system of writing, with all its extraordinary complexities, is believed by philologists to give unequivocal evidence of Sumerian origin."¹

As regards the Babylonian religion, it "was largely influenced by the Sumerians, which was an astral religion. The names of the Gods are found written with the same ideograms, although they were doubtless pronounced differently."²

That the Sumerians introduced agriculture in Babylonia, which they carried on by means of irrigation from a number of canals specially constructed for the purpose, has already been referred to. "They also excelled the Semites in artistic spirit and ability, perhaps also as traders and mariners, and the latter probably imitated the former, and seldom reached

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 461.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 523.

them and never superseded them."¹ It would thus appear that the Sumerians gave their indelible stamp over the ancient civilisation and religion of the Babylonians and the Assyrians, to which again modern European civilisation is immensely indebted. As Mr. G. Smith says: "The history of Babylonia has an interest of a wider kind than that of Egypt, from its more intimate connection with the general history of the human race, and from the remarkable influence which its religion, its science and civilisation have had on all subsequent human progress. Its religious traditions carried away by the Israelites who came out of Ur of the Chaldees (Genesis XI. 31) have, through that wonderful people, become the heritage of mankind, while its science and civilisation, through the mediums of the Greeks and the Romans, have become the base of modern research and advancement."

It is for this reason that I have said that from an historical point of view, it would be highly interesting to discover the identity of the race to which the Sumerians or the Chaldees belonged. As we have already pointed out, the inclination of belief among European savants is that it was an Indo-European race, and most probably of the Turanian family. But it would probably be more correct to say that the Sumerians belonged to a race which was a mixture of peoples belonging to the Indo-Aryan and the Turanian (Dravidian) families. It is admitted generally that the Dravidian civilisation was influenced and developed by Aryan colonists from Sapta-Sindhu; and we have seen that it was the Papis who were probably the first to settle on the Malabar and the Coromondal coasts of Southern India and introduce Aryan civilisation and culture among the aboriginal populations, particularly among the Cholas and the Pandyas, and that the Papis afterwards left these coasts in search of a new colony on the coasts of the Persian Gulf, followed by the Cholas who

settled there and founded a flourishing colony. The Sumerians, therefore, must have been the product of the intermixture of the Aryan and Dravidian races. It may be argued that all this is mere supposition on which no historical hypothesis or fabric can be based or constructed. It is a supposition, no doubt; but it is a supposition which becomes a probability when we take into our consideration the following incontestable facts *vis*, (i) that the resemblances between the severed heads of the statues discovered at Telloh or Tell-loh in Chaldea and the facial type of the Dravidians of Southern India are remarkable; (ii) that the language of the Sumerians was agglutinative like the Dravidian languages; (iii) that the Sumerians, *i.e.*, the Chaldees were agriculturists and builders of canals like the ancient Cholas; (iv) that they were mariners and traders like the latter who, in their turn, must have learnt the art of navigation and the principles of commerce from the Persians, and emulated them in everything, even in their spirit of adventure; (v) that of all countries in Western and Southern Asia, a commercial intercourse was admittedly kept up between the coasts of Southern India and those of the Persian Gulf in ancient times; and (vi) that there having been no other civilised country anywhere in the southern portion of Asia or East Africa, no highly civilised people excepting the Indians would found a colony on the shores of the Persian Gulf. We shall see later on how close and intimate was the intercourse between India and Mesopotamia in the ancient days, and how not only the material civilisation but also the religion of the Babylonians and the Assyrians bear unmistakable evidences of the influence of Vedic and Dravidian civilisation and religion. If all these facts, circumstances, and probabilities be taken into consideration, the conclusion would be irresistible that the Sumerians who were the founders of the Babylonian and the Assyrian civilisations were the products of a mixed race of Aryans and Dravidians.

In this connection it will not be out of place to mention

here what Mr. H. R. Hall says about the Sumerians in his *Ancient History of the Near East* (Chap. V, pp. 172-174):

"The Sumerian culture springs into our view ready-made, as it were, which is what we should expect if it was, as seems on other grounds probable, brought into Mesopotamia from abroad. We have no knowledge of the time when the Sumerians were savages: when we first meet with them in the fourth millennium B. C., they are already a civilised, metal-using people living in great and populous cities, possessing a complicated system of writing, and living under the government of firmly established civil and religious dynasties and hierarchies. They had imposed their higher culture on the more primitive inhabitants of the river valley in which they had settled, and had assimilated the civilisation of the conquered, whatever it may have been, to their own. The earliest scenes of their own culture-development had perhaps not been played upon the Babylonian stage at all, but in a different country, away across the Persian mountains to the eastward. The land of Elam, the later Susiana, where till the end a non-Semitic nationality of Sumerian culture maintained itself in usual independence of the dominant Mesopotamian power, was no doubt a stage in their progress. There they left the abiding impress of their civilisation, although the Elamites developed their art on a distinct line of their own. Whether the Elamites, whom they probably civilised, were racially related to them we do not know; the languages of both Elamite and Sumerian were agglutinative, but otherwise are not alike.....The ethnic type of the Sumerians, so strongly marked in their statues and reliefs, was as different from those of the races which surrounded them, as was their language from those of the Semites, Aryans, or others; *they were decidedly Indian in type*. The face-type of the average Indian of to-day is no doubt much the same as that of his Dravidian race-ancestors thousands of years ago. Among the modern Indians, as amongst the modern Greeks or Italians, the ancient pre-Aryan type of the

land has (as the primitive type of the land always does) survived, while that of the Aryan conqueror died out long ago. And it is to this Dravidian ethnic type of India that the ancient Sumerian bears most resemblance, so far as we can judge from his monuments. *He was very like a Southern Hindu of the Dekkan* (who still speaks Dravidian languages). And it is by no means improbable that the Sumerians were an Indian race which passed, certainly by land, perhaps also by sea, through Persia to the valley of the Two Rivers. It was in the Indian home (perhaps the Indus valley) that we suppose for them that their culture developed. There their writing may have been invented, and progressed from a purely pictorial to a simplified and abbreviated form, which afterwards in Babylonia took on its peculiar cuneiform appearance owing to its being written with a square-ended stilus on soft clay. On the way they left the seeds of their culture in Elam. This seems a plausible theory of Sumerian origin, and it must be clearly understood that it is offered by the present writer merely as a theory, which has little direct evidence to back it, but seems most in accordance with the probabilities of the case. There is little doubt that India must have been one of the earliest centres of human civilisation, and it seems natural to suppose that the strange un-Semitic, un-Aryan people who came from the East to civilise the West were of Indian origin, especially when we see with our eyes how very Indian the Sumerians were in type."

Mr. Hall adds in a foot-note that "this civilisation was not Aryan. The culture of India is pre-Aryan in origin; as in Greece, the conquered civilised the conquerors. The Aryan Indian owed his civilisation and his degeneration to the Dravidians, as the Aryan Greek did to the Mycenaeans." This, to our mind, is reading history on an altogether wrong line. If Mr. Hall had cared to study R̥gvedic civilisation as diligently as he has studied Babylonian civilisation, he would assuredly have come to a quite different conclusion. As our readers have seen, it was Aryan civilisation that put

its indelible stamp on Dravidian culture, and uplifted the Dravidian races, notably the Cholas and the Pāṇdyas, who took their reformed civilisation to Babylonia and Egypt respectively, as we shall see later on.

"Thirty years ago," writes Ragozin, "no one would have thought of connecting India (pre-Aryan India) with archaic Babylonia, and if a solitary fact pointing that way was once in a while picked out by an exceptionally inquisitive and observant mind, it was suffered to remain unexplained as a sort of natural curiosity, for the inferences it suggested was too startling to be more than hinted at. Eminently such a mind was the late François Lenormant, and he laid great stress on the use of the word *mand* as early as the R̥gveda to denote a definite quantity of gold—a word which can be traced to ancient Chaldea or Semitic Babylonia with the same meaning, and which afterwards passed into the Greek monetary system (*mand*, still later latinised into *mina*). Well, this little fact simply points to a well-established commercial intercourse between Dravidian India (for the Kolarians never came as far west as the land by the Indian ocean) and Babylonia and Chaldea."¹

Ragozin's ideas appear to be a little confused in the above extracts that we have made from the excellent work, *Vedic India*. The writer is clearly convinced that there was commercial intercourse between Dravidian India and Babylonia or Chaldea in the ancient days. But by using the phrase "pre-Aryan India" the author seems to think that the word *mand* used by the Dravidians and the Babylonians, and borrowed by the Greeks, was either of Dravidian or Babylonian origin, and that it was borrowed by the Vedic Aryans from the Dravidians, and used in the R̥gveda after they had settled down in Sapta-Sindhu. This line of thinking perfectly accords with the hypothesis in vogue that the Aryans were immigrants into the Punjab from either Central Asia or some

remote region at a comparatively recent time, or at any rate, at an age later than the flourishing of the Babylonian empire. But if Ragozin had more carefully studied the *R̥gveda*, and more closely examined the etymology of the word, she would have assuredly come to the conclusion that the Vedic Aryans were autochthonous in Sapta-Sindhu, and the word is of purely Sanskrit origin, being derived either from the root *ma*, to measure, or *man*, to prize or value. The verse where the word occurs has been translated as follows:—"Oh, bring us jewels, cattle, horses and *mands* of gold." (Rv. viii. 78, 2.) *Manā* is here undoubtedly a definite *measure* of gold, which had a fixed and recognised weight and value, and used probably as coin, and therefore *prised* and coveted by all, even by *R̥sis*. To suggest therefore that it was a word borrowed by the Vedic Aryans from the Dravidians is simply preposterous. The only plausible suggestion should have been all the other way, *vis.*, that it was borrowed by the Dravidians probably from the Aryan merchants, the *Paṇis*, and taken by them or the latter to Chaldea, whence it passed on to the Greeks.

Ragozin further goes on: "In the ruins of Mugheir, ancient Ur of the Chaldees, built by Ur-Ea (or Ur-Bagash)¹ the first king of United Babylonia, who ruled not less than 3,000 B.C., was found a piece of Indian teak.² The evidence is exceptionally conclusive because, as it happens, this particular tree is to be located with more than ordinary accuracy: it grows in Southern India (Dekhan) where it advances close to the Malabar coast, and nowhere else; there is none north of the Vindhya."³ This clearly proves

¹ Among certain Ruling Families of Southern India, especially the Mysore (or Mahlsur) Family, we find the title of Ur given to the names of Princes. Has it got anything to do with the ancient name of Ur used in Babylonia, and can it be that Mugheir was a corrupted form, of Mahlsur? Here is some food for philologists.

² Sayce, *Hibbert Lectures* for 1887, pp. 18, 136, 137.

³ Ragozin, *Vedic India*, pp. 305-306.

that there was commercial intercourse by sea between Chaldea and Southern India, and that this particular timber used to be transported in ships from the Malabar coast either by the Papis or the Cholas for building purposes—the building of ships as well as of houses. This fact also lends a strong colour to the view that the Chaldeans were really the Cholas of the Dravidian family.

From the Babylonian name of muslin, which was *sindhu*, Ragozin rightly concludes that the article used to be manufactured by the Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu "at an amazingly early period"—"a fact which implies cultivation of the cotton plant or tree, probably in Vedic times."¹ She thinks, however, that this stuff of Aryan product used to be exported by the enterprising Dravidian traders only, and not by the Aryan merchants, as the Aryans had no export trade, "not being acquainted with the sea, or the construction of sea-going ships."² I have quoted this last amusing passage in order to show how superficial has been the study of the Ṛgveda with some Western scholars, and how errors, once ushered into existence, die hard. After a careful study of the Ṛgveda, Professor Wilson observed: "They (the Ṛgvedic Aryans) were a maritime and mercantile people....Not only are the *Sūktas* familiar with the ocean and its phenomena, but we have merchants described as pressing earnestly on board ship for the sake of gain; and we have a naval expedition against a foreign island or continent (*dvīpa*) frustrated by a shipwreck."³ Our readers also have already clearly seen (*vide* Chapter III) that the Ṛgvedic Aryans were fully acquainted with the sea, having four seas round about their country, that they had sea-going ships propelled by one hundred oars, and furnished with sail or "wing," as the Ṛgvedic bard has

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 306.

² *Ibid.*, p. 307.

³ Wilson's Translation of the Ṛg-Veda, Intro: p. XLI second edition, 1860.

picturesquely described the thing, and that one of their tribes, the Papis, were famous ship-builders and sea-faring merchants, possessed of a dash and daring enterprise which is simply amazing. The Dravidians, after they were uplifted and civilised by the Papis, might have exported the stuff known as *sindhu* in post-Rgvedic times to Babylonia, but this does not in any way prove that the Aryans were not acquainted with the sea, or did not themselves export the products of their manufacture to foreign countries.¹ "Professor Max

¹ European scholars have invented the theory that the ancient Aryans lived in some place with a homogeneous civilisation, culture and language, whom they have called Proto-Aryans, and that they gradually dispersed from that one central hive over Europe and Asia. The very fact that there is no common word for the sea among the various branches of the Aryan family has led them to infer that the primeval home of the Proto-Aryans was an "inland home." The Vedic word for the sea is *Samudra*, the Latin and the Greek name is *Pontos*, *Pentus* (a high-road, Sansk. *Panthā*); the Slavs call it *Mória* (Lat. *Mur*, Italian and Spanish *Mare*, French *Mer*, German *Meer*, English *More*, meaning a lake. Celtic *Muir*) which is derived from a Sanskrit root *veri* meaning "destruction." This difference, says Ragozin, is well accounted for "when we consider that the only sea the Slavs and Tautons were acquainted with were the Black Sea, the Baltic, and the German Ocean, all rough and treacherous, all renowned for their fierce tempests, which must have been destructive indeed to small and imperfect craft,—while the fortunate dweller on the genial Mediterranean shores well could look at the sea, not as a barrier, but as a high road, more useful for trade or travel than any other road." (*Vedic India*, pp. 72-73.) But our theory is that the early Aryans of Sapta-Sindhu were in different stages of civilisation in Rgvedic times, and the savage and nomadic Aryan tribes lived in the forests and mountains from which they were gradually driven out, and moved westward through western Asia, and the Isthmus of Bosphorus into Europe. Those of them who became acquainted with the sea in Europe, gave separate names to it, according to their different experiences; but this does not in any way prove that the Vedic Aryans were not acquainted with the sea. The very meanings of the word *Samudra*, either "a collection of waters" or "waters that swell and flood the land by tidal waves" would be most natural to apply to the sea. Hence I am of opinion that the Vedic Aryans were fully acquainted with the sea from the very earliest times, but the savage and nomadic Aryan tribes who lived in the hills and forests on the northern portions of Sapta-Sindhu, and afterwards were dispersed towards the west, were not. Hence they applied different names to the sea when they became acquainted with it.

Müller," says Rāgozin, "has long ago shown that the names of certain rare articles which King Solomon's trading ships brought him, were not originally Hebrew.¹ These articles are sandal-wood (indigenous to the Malabar coast and nowhere else), ivory, apes and peacocks; and their native names, which could easily be traced through their Hebrew corruptions, have all along been set down as Sanskrit, being common words of that language. But, now quite lately, an eminent Dravidian scholar and specialist brings proofs that they are really Dravidian words, introduced into Sanskrit."² This observation may be applicable to later Sanskrit, but certainly not to Ṛgvedic Sanskrit in which *mayūra* is the distinct name for peacock, and *kapi* for monkey. There is no mention of sandal-wood in the Ṛgveda, showing clearly that the Ṛgvedic Aryans had no knowledge of the Malabar coast to which the tree is indigenous. By the way, the Hebrew word for peacock is *tukiyim* which bears a close resemblance to the old Tamil word *tokai*. But I have not come across any Ṛgvedic word which is derived from *tokai*. The Sanskrit word *muktā* may have been derived from the Tamil word *muttu*, but the word occurs nowhere in the Ṛgveda to denote pearl. It would thus appear that the Dravidians had no connection whatever with the Vedic Aryans in Ṛgvedic times. However this may be, there can be no doubt that the Dravidian names of these animals and articles, current in Hebrew, go to prove the early Intercourse of the Dravidians with the Semites. But it is also a fact which is to be remembered in this connection that the vessels of the Phœnicians or the Papis "visited the coasts of Arabia, Ethiopia, and the Malabar coast of India" and "the commodities which they imported were ivory, precious stones,

¹ *Science of Language*, First series, pp. 203-204. (1862).

² Rāgozin's *Vedic India*, p. 307. The eminent Dravidian scholar is Dr. Caldwell. (*Vide* "Introduction to Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Language.")

ebony and gold, to which may be added apes and peacocks; all satisfactorily proving that they visited the countries just mentioned."¹

The connection between the Dravidians and the first Babylonian Empire—the Babylonia of the Shumiro-Accads before the advent of the Semites—"becomes less surprising," says Ragozin, "when we realise that there was between them something more than chance relations, that they were in fact of the same race or stock—that which is broadly designated as Turanian. Philology points that way, for the Dravidian languages are agglutinative; craniology will not disprove the affinity, for a glance at the Gondh types, and the turbanned head of Tell-loh (Accadian Sirgulla) will show the likeness in features and shape. But even more convincing is the common sacred symbol—the serpent, the emblem of the worship of Earth, with its mystery, its wealth and its forces. The Accadian Serpent-God Ea was worshipped at his holiest shrine at Eridhu under the form of a serpent, and as Eridhu was the centre from which the first Chaldean civilisation started and spread, so the serpent-symbol was accepted as that of the race and its religion. The Turanian Proto-Medes also, before they were conquered by the Aryan followers of Zarathustra, worshipped the snake-symbol of Earth, which afterwards was identified by the Eranian Mazdayasnians, with Angra Mainyush, the Evil one, the spirit of Lie and Death. This Proto-Median serpent, like his Dravidian brother, had the honour of being admitted into the Aryan Mythic Epos." (*Vedic India*, pp. 309-310.)

The correctness of this last conclusion drawn by Ragozin is doubted. In the *R̥gveda*, we find a whole Sūkta (Rv. x. 189) composed by a lady-*R̥ṣi*, named *Sārpa-Rājñī* (the Serpent-Queen) who is regarded as the deity presiding over the Earth. (*Sāyaṇa*.) The verses of this Sūkta have been addressed to the Sun. The *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* explaining

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. II, p. 333.

them says: "The Earth herself is Sarpa-Rājñi" (ii. 1. 4. 30). The *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa* also explains the word as "the Earth" (v. 4. 4). The ancient Babyionian worship of the Earth in the emblem of a serpent is, therefore, not indigenous to the land or Southern India, nor peculiar to the Dravidians.

We have already mentioned an Aryan tribe who, on account of their nomadic habits and a probable leaning towards the worship of Vṛtra who was called *Ahi* or the serpent and sometimes *Deva*, were hated by the Vedic Aryans who worshipped Indra—the chastiser and destroyer of Vṛtra, and ultimately driven out of Sapta-Sindhu. We have also mentioned the name of a *Ṛṣi* of the *Sarpas*, who presided at a sacrifice held by the Vedic Aryans and whose *mantras* have found a place in the *Ṛgveda*.¹ We have further referred to the story related in the *Mahābhārata* about the migrations of the *Sarpas* to an island, probably to Southern India, from Sapta-Sindhu, and that of a *Ṛṣi* who married the sister of the Sarpa-king, Vāsuki. The *Papīs* also may have been the votaries of Vṛtra who is identified in the *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa* (i. 5. 3. 18) with the Moon, the God of Night (Darkness), and was the arch-enemy of Indra, and they probably worshipped him in the symbol of Serpent (*Ahi*).² In *Ṛv.* ii. 31, 6, we find mention made of a god, named *Ahi-Budhna*; and this name has been explained by *Sāyana* to be that of "the God *Ahi* who lives in *antarikṣa*" (mid-heaven). This explanation has been admitted by *Roth* in his lexicon as correct. Probably this god was none other

¹ *Ṛg.* x. 94. 1-14.

² The new crescent moon appears on the horizon like a sickle, which looks like a serpent. Vṛtra was therefore *Ahi*. The Vṛtra worship seems to refer to the worship of the Moon, as opposed to the worship of the Sun. The *Ṛgvedic* Aryans worshipped the Sun only and not the Moon whom they looked upon as Vṛtra or the Demon of darkness. He was probably called a *Deva* on account of the brightness of the Moon. The *Papīs* were identified with Vṛtra because they were Moon-worshippers. Vṛtra was also sometimes identified with the zig-zag lightning, which had the shape of a serpent.

than the Moon. But as Ahi was, in common Vedic parlance, identical with the arch-enemy of Indra, his worshippers were necessarily put down by the Vedic Aryans as the worshippers of Vṛtra, or the power of evil. In these circumstances, I am disposed to think that the worship of Ahi or the Serpent as the symbol of the Earth, or the Moon, must have proceeded from Sapta-Sindhu, and been carried to Southern India by the Panis, and those Aryan tribes who were called *Sarpas* not only on account of their nomadic habits, but also because they worshipped their deity in the symbol of a serpent. The very name, Ahi, is traceable in the Sumerian or Chaldean Ea; and the name of the town of Eridhu, in which the holiest shrine of Ea stood, may, for aught we know, have been a corruption of the word Vṛtra, which is so difficult to pronounce correctly. It can be safely surmised, therefore, that the worship of Ahi or the serpent continued among the non-Vedic Aryans uninterruptedly; and was certainly not borrowed either from the Turanians or any other race.

Be that as it may, there can be no question now as to who the Sumerians or the Chaldeans were, and whence they immigrated to Chaldea. They were, as I have already said, a mixed race, sprung from the Panis and the Dravidians (Cholas), and were immigrants from the Coromondal and the Malabar coasts. The Cholas had been "aryanised" before they left their original home, and took with them their Aryan culture and civilisation, as adopted and modified by them, to their new colony.

We have, in a previous chapter (Chapter III), discussed the Flood-legends as were current among the ancient Aryans, the Chaldeans or Babylonians, the Israelites, the Egyptians and the Greeks, and pointed out the material difference noticeable in the various legends. We have also pointed out that these floods did not occur at one and the same time in the different countries, and that the Flood, with which Manu's name is connected, had occurred, long before the

Flood in Babylonia and Noah's Flood occurred, if these really occurred at all. The Indian Flood-legend, referred to in the Atharva-Veda, is related first in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa which says that it was caused not by heavy and continuous downpours of rain "for three days" as mentioned by Berossus in the Babylonian account, or for "forty days and forty nights" as mentioned in the Bible, but by the waters of the ocean rising in a tremendous flood and covering the land, probably in consequence of some seismic disturbance of great intensity. Manu, who had been previously warned by the Divine Fish and constructed a ship, got into it when the Flood came, and the Divine Fish dragged his ship to a peak of the "Northern Mountain" (the Himālaya), and advised his protégé to disembark as soon as the Flood should subside. I have already more than once ventured a guess that the Flood was caused in Sapta-Sindhu by the sudden upheaval of the bed of the Rajputana Sea, which displaced and scattered around the vast volumes of its waters. After the subsidence of the Flood, and the drying up of the seabed, there was a rapid immigration of many surviving Aryan tribes of Sapta-Sindhu into the Deccan, headed by a descendant of Agastya, to whom is ascribed the wonderful feat of having first sipped up the ocean dry and then crossed the Vindhya, and by the descendants of Viçvāmitra, the Pāṇis, and others. These peoples must have carried with them the story of the wonderful and devastating Flood (*Aukha*) in Sapta-Sindhu, and it went down among their descendants and the Dravidian peoples (who must have heard it from the Aryan settlers), from generation to generation, with such exaggerations and embellishments as the storytellers were capable of inventing. In course of ages, people forgot all about the place of origin of the Flood, or the previous existence of the Rajputana Sea; and the sea from which Manu's ship started towards "the Northern mountain" naturally came to be identified with the Indian Ocean, and the place where Manu had lived and

performed his penances, located on the banks of "the river Kritamāṁ" in Malabar, as related in the *Bhāgavata Purāṇa*, or "in a certain region of Malaya" (Malabar) as related in the *Matsya Purāṇa*. As these Purāṇas are admittedly of more recent date than the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, we can easily understand how the story of the Flood travelled from Sapta-Sindhu to the coast of Malabar with the emigration of the Aryan colonists, who embellished it with fuller details to give it an air of probability than those found in the story related in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa. Hence it would be more reasonable to suppose that the story travelled with the Cholas and the Pāṇis from Southern India to the coast of the Persian Gulf in the form in which we find it in the Purāṇas and the Babylonian and Biblical accounts than that it came from the latter place to India, as is supposed by some European scholars. The belief that Manu was saved by the Divine Fish which was identified by some with Prajāpati, the Creator, and by others with Viṣṇu, at once raised the Fish-God to the highest place in the Hindu Pantheon, for which a cult was established. Very likely, the cult was propounded and developed by the aryanised Dravidians who became the chief votaries of the God, and also claimed Manu as a Dravidian king under the name of Satyavrata.¹ This word (*Satyavrata*) was probably corrupted into *Hasisadra* by the Chaldeans, and *Xisuthrus* or *Sisithrus* by the Greeks,—the name of the king who was the hero of the Chaldean or Babylonian Flood. *Hasisadra*, however, is not given any mission or task, like Manu or Noah, "but is simply translated with his wife into immortal life." (Ragozin.) Be that as it may, as the Divine Fish was regarded as an incarnation of Viṣṇu or the Sun, who saved Manu—the son of Vivasvat or the Solar Deity—and as the Sun was also identified with Indra, the vanquisher of Vṛtra, Ahi, or the Moon, the Fish-God or Viṣṇu also was given the

¹ Vide *Bhāgavata Purāṇa*

title of *Ahi-han*, like Indra who had the title of *Vṛtra-han*; and the Dravidian worshippers of Viṣṇu or the Fish-God probably worshipped him under the name of Ahi-han, to distinguish him from Indra who was called *Vṛtra-han*, though he also appears under the name of Ahi-han in the Ṛgveda (ii. 19, 3).¹ Though Indra and Viṣṇu were originally one deity, we notice an effort made in the Ṛgveda itself to separate them, Viṣṇu being regarded as an helper of Indra in his fight with Vṛtra. In ancient Dravidian India, we find the two deities still more separated with different titles which, however, have the same significance, and the worship of Viṣṇu established in the place of Indra-worship. Later on, in the age of the Purāṇas, the Indra-cult appears to have been over-thrown by the Viṣṇu-cult, as Kṛṣṇa, the incarnation of Viṣṇu, has been described to have waged a war against Indra and defeated him. Ahi-han thus replaced Vṛtra-han, and represented the Supreme Deity who was worshipped by the followers of Viṣṇu. However this may be, the Chola tribe of the Dravidians must have taken with them to Chaldea the image of their Supreme Deity, the Fish-God, the incarnation of Viṣṇu—whom they called Ahi-han, which was corrupted into Ea-han, and still more into Oannes,² to which the epithet Musaras or Matsya (Fish) was added. As the Cholas attributed their culture to the direct influence of Ahi-han, the civilisation spread by them in Chaldea among the aboriginal population was also attributed to him. Possibly the word Ahi-han, savouring as it did of Indra, came to be abbreviated into simple Ahi or Ea through the influence of the Paṇis who were the worshippers of the Earth and the Moon under the name of Ahi or Ahi-Budhna, and Ea or Ahi, under the forms of the Fish-god or the Serpent, became the principal God of the Chaldeans.

¹ The legend of Kṛṣṇa (a later incarnation of Viṣṇu) vanquishing the serpent Kāliya in a lake near Brindāvana, can be traced to this mythology which has its roots in the Ṛgveda.

² Ragotin's, *Vedic India*, p. 346.

All these probabilities being taken into consideration, my surmise is that the story of Manu's Flood travelled with subsequent embellishments from Sapta-Sindhu to Southern India, and thence to Chaldea. This story, with other legends and religious traditions, must have been "carried away by the Israelites who came out from Ur of the Chaldees" (*vide* Genesis xi. 31), and Noah was substituted by them for Manu, and the Fish-god was merged into the God of the Israelites. The Floods, however, in Chaldea and Israel were caused not by the rising of a stupendous tidal wave from the ocean in consequence of some volcanic action, but a deluge of rain, as probably the story-tellers could not conceive the idea of a country being flooded excepting by a heavy and continuous downpour of rain. A deluge of rain, continued for three days, as told by Berossus, was probably considered insufficient for flooding a country by the Israelites, who therefore improved the story by saying that heavy showers of rain fell for forty days and nights. The element of the Fish in the story, however, was eliminated both by the Babylonians (who were a mixed people, sprung from the intermingling of the Chaldeans and the Semites) and the Israelites who were a purely Semitic people, characterised by a strong commonsense and practical spirit, and the fish was replaced by God, their Supreme Deity, who warned both Hasradra and Noah of the coming Flood. The introduction of the Fish in the Vedic legend is essentially original, and thoroughly disproves the theory of the legend having been borrowed or brought to India, through the Dravidians. The Vedic legend lacks some of the details of the Babylonian and Biblical accounts of the Flood, and is devoid of literary embellishment, thus pointing to the crude original ore from which the article was picked up and subsequently embellished and finished.

It may be asked: "How can the Vedic legend of Manu's Flood be rationally explained?" I will attempt a brief explanation here. Manu was washing himself one morning, when he found a little fish poured with the water into the hollow of his

palms. Being an ascetic of kindly disposition, he took pity on the tiny creature, and fearing that it might be eaten up by a larger fish, if thrown back into the pond, kept it in a water-jar. When the tiny fish grew too large for the jar, he threw it into the pond, and when it grew sufficiently large in the pond, and was thought by Manu to be able to take care of itself, he threw it into the river, and from the river, it swam down into the sea, which appears to have been close to Manu's hermitage. Manu, living on the sea-shore, probably noticed great agitations both in land and water, due to seismic causes, and, being a wise man, caused a ship to be built for his safety and protection. The seismic action of the earth having grown stronger and stronger every day, he betook himself to the ship for his safety; and when the great tidal wave came, flooding the whole country, his ship floated up with the tide till she reached a peak of the Himālaya. Manu noticed a huge fish, probably a whale, swimming inland with the incoming tidal wave just in front of his ship; and he thought of the little fish that he had saved, and cast into the sea, when it had grown large. Manu probably also thought that his miraculous escape from that devastating flood was undoubtedly due to the mercy of God, because he had himself been merciful to a tiny creature of His; and he naturally attributed to that tiny fish the cause of his safety and deliverance. The fish, therefore, loomed large before him like a luminous embodiment of Divine Mercy, and, in the fulness of his gratitude, identified it with the Divine Being Himself. This simple incident was the focus of the Vedic legend of the Flood as related in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa. Our readers will thus see that there is nothing absurd in the legend, but it is as simple and beautiful as any legend can be.

The religion of the ancient Chaldeans or Babylonians appears to have been moulded by those who had come under the influence of the Vedic religion. The cosmogony, theogony, arts, industries and astronomical science of the ancient Chaldeans bear in them the unmistakable stamp of Vedic

India. Not only are the names of some of the Chaldean Gods traceable to those of the Gods of the Vedic Pantheon, of which we have already given a few instances, but their very religious thoughts bear the impress of the Vedic religion. The names of the Gods worshipped by the Babylonians and the Assyrians were common, though some particular God was assigned the supreme place by the one people or the other. At Nineveh, the capital of Assyria, the god who seems to have been the highest in the celestial hierarchy is Ilu or Ana; but his character is no further defined, and his symbol is often only the abstract representation of the divinity. Though the divinity is one, he is at the same time divisible. "Dogma proclaims this divinity in certain passages, but when we wish to learn its exact individuality, it eludes us, so that we may seize only the abstraction. We are led to believe in a celestial hierarchy of beings inhabiting a superior world, and subordinated to an all-powerful God who governs gods, worlds and men. He is enthroned in spaces inaccessible to us in our condition, and appears only in legends; his power intervenes only when the order of the Universe is threatened."¹ This Ilu or Ana corresponds to the abstract (attributeless) Brahman of the Hindus, who incarnates himself only when the moral order of the Universe is in danger of being upset. We have seen that Indra also was raised to the position of an all-powerful and incomprehensible deity in the *R̥gveda*, and Ilu must be a corruption of the word Indra, or Ilāpati Parjanya (another name of Indra, *vide* Rv. v. 42, 14), or of the Sanskrit word Allā, meaning the supreme deity, as Ana was a corruption of *Ahi-han*. He was also called *Asshur* by the Assyrians, a word which they must have borrowed directly from the Vedic Aryans, and not from their neighbours, the Iranians, who pronounced the word as Ahura. The next God was Bel or Baal who, as we have already seen, was worshipped by the Papis or Phœniclans, and is identified with the *R̥gvedic* Vala or the Sun. The third God was

¹ *Hist Hist of the World*, Vol. I, p. 516.

Anu, or Agni (Fire), whose another Babylonian name was Daganu (Sansk. *Dahana*, fire). "These three divinities appear as the reflection of the gods of the superior world, which we have already mentioned, but to which we have been unable to ascribe names." ¹ We have seen also in the R̥g-veda that the visible bodies of the great Indra was the Sun in the sky, the Lightning in mid-heaven, and Fire on earth. Sin (Sansk. *Candra*) was the god of the Moon; Samash was another name of the Sun, and Bin (Sansk. Vayu, or R̥gvedic *Vena*) was "the god of the higher regions of the atmosphere, arbitrator of the heavens and earth,—the god who presides over the tempests." In Sukta 123 of the Tenth Maṇḍala of the R̥gveda we find the god *Vena* to be a bright and resplendent deity, sending down rain, and residing high above the sky in "the third heaven." The name of the Babylonian storm-god was *Matu* or *Martu*, which corresponds to the Vedic name of the same god, *Marut*. This Babylonian name was probably afterwards borrowed by the Romans who called their god of war Mars (*Martes*). The Indian Sun-god *Dineṣa* (the lord of day) was identical with the Assyrian Sun-god *Dianisu*; and the Greek name *Dionysus*, applied to the same god, was probably borrowed from the Assyrians. Sayce has discovered in an Assyrian inscription the name *Mitra* applied to the Sun-god, who corresponds to the Vedic deity of the same name. The Babylonian deity *Zarpanit* (Sansk. *Sārparājñī*) was the goddess "who particularly represented the fertile principle of the Universe." Ishtar (Astarte) is the name of a goddess whose consort was Tammuz, (Sansk. *Tamaja*, lit. born of darkness, i.e., the Sun, who springs out of darkness); and Ishtar resembles the Vedic *Uṣas* who was the wife of the Sun. But there is one curious feature of the Assyrian and Babylonian gods, which deserves mention here; they assume a human form "often joined with that of various animals fish, oxen or birds." This, at first sight, would appear to be a purely Assyrian or Babylonian invention; but on careful research, we can trace

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 517.

them to Indian mythology, nay to R̥gvedic descriptions of certain gods who have been compared with various animals. For instance, the god *Rudra* has been compared with the boar to denote his fierceness (Rv. i. 114, 5), the god *Vena* or Marut with the vulture to denote his speed (Rv. i. 88, 47 and x. 123, 6 & 8), the Sun with the horse (Rv. x. 136, 5), or the golden-winged eagle (Rv. i. 164, 46), to denote his speed, or flight in the high heavens, and Indra with *vṛṣa* or the bull to denote his strength and majesty (Rv. i. 32, 3). These comparisons must have caused the gods themselves to be identified with the respective animals in later mythology, specially when it reached Southern India. Thus the fish in the story of Manu's Flood became there the very incarnation of Viṣṇu, and was represented as Fish-god; the boar became the incarnation of Viṣṇu under the name of Varāha; the lion with his flowing tawny manes, being compared with the Sun with his refulgent rays, became another incarnation of Viṣṇu under the name of Nṛsiṃha (man-lion); and the bull, with his virile powers of generation, came to be identified with Indra who poured showers of rain to fertilize the earth. The Greek legend of Zeus (Jupiter or Jove) assuming the form of a bull may also be thus traced to this mythology. Many stone statues have been discovered in the ruins of Nineveh and Babylon representing one god as half-man and half-beast, another as half-man and half-bird, and yet another as half-man and half-fish. More such statues may be discovered in the course of further excavations. In a majority of cases, the head only is human, and the rest of the body resembles that of an animal either a lion or a bull, furnished with wings to symbolize the celestial character of the deity. In the case of the representation of the God Eagle-Man only, do we find the head to be that of the bird, and the rest of the body human, but furnished with wings. This deity undoubtedly represents the *Garuḍa* or the *Cyena* of the R̥gveda, who in later mythology vied with the Sun or Viṣṇu for supremacy, and was regarded as Viṣṇu himself.¹ Very likely, *Garuḍa*

¹ *Mahābhārata*, Book I, Chapter 33.

represented the nomadic Aryan tribes who used to bring the *Soma* plant for the Vedic Aryans from the Himālaya, and afterwards migrated to Southern India, and flourished in the age of the Rāmāyaṇa under kings Jatāyus and Sampāti. The Cholas must have carried these mythologies with them to their new home in Chaldea, and given a tangible shape to them in the statues which have been discovered in the ruins of Nineveh and Babylon.

The Assyrian and Babylonian Cosmogonies also resemble the Vedic Cosmogony in some of its principal features. Mr. L. W. King has discovered certain tablets whose translation he has published in his *Seven Tablets of Creation*. The authorities of the British Museum have given a gist of the records, from which the following is condensed :—

The First Tablet of the series describes the time when the heavens were not, when there were no planets, and before the gods had come into being, and when the water-deep was the source and origin of all things. The male and female deities of the primeval watery mass were called *Apsu* and *Tiamat*; their children were called *Lakhmu* and *Lakhāmu*, and their grand-children *Anshar* and *Kishar*, and their great-grand-children were *Amu*, *Bel*, *Ea* and other great Gods. The other Tablets describe how *Tiamat* afterwards became jealous of the gods, and created a brood of monsters, so that they might wage war against the gods. The plot having become known to the gods, they assembled to take counsel among themselves, and made *Marduk* their leader. *Marduk* fought with *Tiamat*, and defeating her, cut her up into two halves, one of which formed the firmament and the other the earth. Then the stars were created, the year with twelve months established, and the Moon appointed "to determine the days." Then men was created by *Marduk* from his flesh and bones.¹

¹ *Hist Hist of the World*, Vol. I, pp. 520-521. This *Marduk* is wrongly identified by some scholars with the *Marus* of the R̥gveda. The name of the Babylonian Storm-God was *Matu* or *Martu* which, as we have seen

The Babylonian religion was largely influenced by the Sumerian, which was an astral religion. The legend of the Babylonian creation was practically the same as the Assyrian: "In the beginning was Chaos, consisting of watery mass. Only two beings existed—Apsu, the Deep, and Tiamat, the Universal mother. These two represent the two formulative elements, from whose unions the gods were created." ² Then followed the creation of the brood of monsters produced by Tiamat with the object of annihilating the gods, as in the Assyrian legend, and her ultimate defeat and destruction.

Now compare these cosmogonical accounts with the account of the Vedic Cosmogony (Rig. x. 129):—

"1. Nor aught nor naught existed then; not the aerial space, nor heaven's bright woof above. What covered all? Where rested all? Was it water, the profound abyss?

was the same as the Vedic *Martut*, and must have been taken by the *Paṇis* and *Cholas* to Babylonia. *Marduk* was probably the same God as *Mārdika*, mentioned in Rg. iv. 18, 12, who was opposed to Indra, and is said to have killed Indra's father, *Dyā-dēd* or the sky, by probably covering it up with clouds or darkness, for which reason he was not only not recognised in the Rgveda as a Deva (Rv. iv. 18, 13), but put down as a malevolent deity, like *Vṛtra* probably worshipped by savage Aryan tribes who were opposed to Indra-worship. The name of *Mārdika* must have been carried by the *Paṇis* to Southern India, whence it travelled to Mesopotamia under the name of *Marduk*. It is remarkable, however, that like Indra in India, he was the leader of the Gods in Babylonia, and fought with *Tiamat* or darkness, the Universal mother, who produced a brood of monsters (serpents or *Akīs*) in opposition to her first-born sons, the Gods, with a view to defeat them. As Indra killed *Vṛtra* and *Vṛtra's* mother so *Marduk* also killed *Tiamat* with all her dark brood of monsters. It would thus appear that *Mārdika* in the Rgveda was the god of those Aryan tribes who were opposed to Indra-worship, and was, in fact a rival of Indra like *Vṛtra's* *Vala*, or *Ahura Mazda*. Though regarded by the Vedic Aryans as an evil power, *Mārdika* resembled Indra in some of the feats performed by him. To say that *Marduk* travelled all the way from Babylonia to Rgvedic India, and found mention in a Rgvedic hymn under the name of *Mārdika* is simply preposterous and is opposed to sound commonsense and the correct reading of ancient Indian History.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 322.

"2. Death was not then, nor immortality; there was no difference of day and night. That One breathed breathless of Itself (*i.e.*, existed, but without exerting or manifesting Itself); and there was nothing other than It.

"3. In the beginning there was darkness in darkness enfolded; all was undistinguishable water. That One, which lay in the empty space, wrapped in nothingness, was developed by the power of heat.¹

"4. Desire first arose in It—that was the primeval germ of mind, which poets searching with their intellects, discovered in their hearts to be the bond between Being and Not-Being.

"5. A ray of light which stretched across these worlds, did it come from below or from above? Then seeds were sown and mighty forces arose, Nature beneath, and Power and Will above.

"6. Who indeed knows? Who proclaimed it here—whence, whence this creation was produced? The Gods were later than its production—who then knows whence it sprang?

"7. He from whom this creation sprang, whether He made it or not, the All-seer in the highest heaven, He knows it,—or He does not."

The Vedic thinkers conceived primeval chaos, unquickened as yet by the first fiat of Creative Will, yet brooded over by the Divine Presence, which their great poetic gift enabled them to clothe in such words as, to use Max Müller's enthusiastic expression, "language blushes at but her blush is a blush of triumph." "One of the great beauties of this matchless piece," says Ragozin, "is that while reaching the uttermost bounds of philosophical abstraction, it is never obscure unless to the absolutely uninitiated."

¹ Max Müller has translated *tapasas* into "by power of heat," but the word also means "by penance." The *Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa* reads "*tamasa*" which means "out of darkness."

There is another short cosmogonic piece in the *Ṛgveda* (x. 190), which is worth quoting here :

"From kindled heat (*tapasa*) Right and Law were born (*Satya* and *Ṛta*, the Cosmic Order), and night, then the watery flood. And from the watery flood the coursing year was born, disposing day and night, the ruler of all that close the eyes. And in their order the Creator formed the sun and the moon, and heaven and earth, the regions of the air and light."

The accounts of the Assyrian and Babylonian Cosmogonies are characterized not only by obscurity of expression but also by a confusion of thoughts and ideas. They seem, however, to have embodied in them not only the account of the Vedic cosmogony but also the Vedic account of the struggle of the Gods to overcome the powers of darkness, *vis.*, *Vṛtra* and his hosts, which forms the theme of many a *Ṛgvedic* hymn. In the *Ṛgveda*, we find that the mother of *Vṛtra* was slain with *Vṛtra* himself by *Indra*, and they both lay down below the waters (*Rv.* i. 32, 8. 9). This probably is the origin of the story of the cutting up of *Tiamat* into twain by *Marduk* in the Assyrian account. It seems very probable that this account of the Vedic cosmogony and the struggle of the Gods with *Vṛtra* was taken by the aryanized Cholas in an abbreviated form from Southern India to Mesopotamia. Like *Vṛtra*, the sons of *Tiamat* are all *snakes*, or *dragons* in the Babylonian legend.

This cosmogonical account of the Babylonians and Assyrians must have found its way among the Israelites who, as we have already pointed out, emigrated to Syria from the city of *Ur*, the ancient capital of *Chaldea*. The Biblical account of the creation of the world, though resembling the Vedic in some points, is also characterized by obscurity of language, and confusion of ideas. It would be beyond the scope of this chapter to deal with these defects of the Biblical account ; but I would refer my readers to the chapter on *Genesis*, so that they may be able to judge for themselves the truth of my remarks.

The words *Apsu* and *Tiamat* in the Assyrian and Babylonian accounts undoubtedly resemble the Sanskrit words *Āpa* and *Tamas*, meaning water and darkness respectively. The water, of course, was not the material water we see, but the very essence of it in abstraction, the *tanmātra*, as it is called by Sanskrit philosophers. *Tamas* was the darkness reigning over the bottomless abyss. But *Tiamat* has been wrongly rendered into English as water or ocean, which she was not. The brood of the dark evil powers, produced by *Tiamat* independently, could not be but the brood of Darkness itself. It would be profitless further to seek a resemblance of the names of the Assyrian and Babylonian Gods, for they were mostly transformed into words of Semitic origin, or corrupted in pronunciation beyond recognition. That the Sumerians or Chaldeans, after the invasion of the Semites, adopted the language of their conquerors is an undoubted fact. "The most ancient populations of this country," says a writer, "formed several closely related races which had no connection with the other nations of Western Asia, but in the course of historical evolution, they lost their language and nationality, and were submerged in the neighbouring races." ¹ It is therefore really astonishing that we should still find in the Semitic language some traces of the source from which the religion of the ancient Babylonians and Assyrians was derived.

About 77 years ago, Dr. Edward Hinks propounded the theory that though the Sumerians, who laid the foundation of the Babylonian civilisation, might not have been an Aryan race, their speech bore unmistakable evidence of the influence of Aryan speech,² and his conclusions are now generally admitted to be correct. Hommel, Delitzsch and Kremer have discovered certain primitive relations between Aryan and Semitic speech. Hommel adduces six culture-words which, in this opinion, establish such a primitive connection. "Delitzsch goes deeper. He

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 341.

² *J. R. A. S.*, Vol. IX, pp. 397-449 (1848).

claims to have identified one hundred Semitic roots with Aryan roots."¹ In my humble way, I have endeavoured to establish the identity of the names of some of the Babylonian and Assyrian Gods with those of the Aryan (Vedic) Gods, and to prove that the Babylonian Cosmogony bore the stamp of the Vedic Cosmogony. All these, however, do not prove the Aryan origin of the Sumerians, but only go to show that they must have been a people who came under the influence of Aryan speech and culture. I have already said that these Sumerians or Chaldeans belonged to the Chola tribe of the Dravidian race, who had been aryanized by the Papis and other Aryan settlers in Southern India. I will now proceed to note down some more points of resemblances between the Chaldean and the Vedic civilisations.

The creation of man from the flesh and bones of Marduk as related in the Assyrian tablet resembles the Ṛgvedic legend of the sacrifice of *Puruṣa*, and the creation from his limbs of the four castes into which mankind is divided. The primitive four castes are common to and observable in all races of mankind, whether civilised or barbarous. But while they are elastic in other communities, they have become hard and crystallized in the present Hindu society. Be that as it may, I will quote here the passages from the Ṛgveda (x. 90, 11 and 12) which describe the creation of the four castes from the severed limbs of *Puruṣa* :

"When the Gods divided *Puruṣa*, into how many parts did they cut him up? What was his mouth? What his arms? What his thighs and feet?

"The Brāhman was his mouth; the Rājanya was made his arm; the Vaiśya, he was his thighs; the Sūdra sprang from his feet."

It is needless to say that the resemblance between the two legends is remarkable, with this difference only that the Babylonian legend is brief, while the Vedic legend is elaborate.

¹ Taylor's *Origin of the Aryans*, p. 40.

The religious ceremonies of the ancient Babylonians, like those of the Vedic Aryans, bore a relation to external worship ; they all ended in invocation or sacrifice. " The cylinder-engraved scenes give us an idea of these ceremonies ; we usually see the priest in an attitude of adoration or prayer, sometimes alone, but often before an altar on which reposes the object of adoration, or that which is going to be sacrificed. The most usual victim is a ram or kid. The Assyrian kings never began an important expedition without having invoked the Gods and held religious ceremonies ; after a victory they offered a sacrifice on the borders of their newly conquered states. These sacrifices generally took place in the open air ; nevertheless temples were numerous in Assyria and Chaldea."¹ These customs and practices mostly resembled those of the ancient Indo-Aryans.

The priests of ancient Chaldea held a high position in society, like the Brahman priests of ancient or modern India. They were called *Patesis* which may have been a corruption of the Sanskrit word *Purohita*. Says Diodorus : " The Chaldeans being the most ancient Babylonians held the same station and dignity in the Commonwealth, as the Egyptian priests do in Egypt. For being deputed to Divine offices they spend all their time in study of Philosophy, and are especially famous in the Art of Astrology. They are mightily given to Divination, and foretell future events, and employ themselves either by Purification, Sacrifices, or other Incantments to avert Evils, or procure good Fortune and Success. They are skilful likewise in the art of Divination, by the flying of Birds, and interpreting of Dreams and Prodigies : And are reported as true Oracles (in declaring what will come to pass) by their exact and diligent viewing of Intrails of the Sacrifices. But they attain not to their Knowledge in the same manner as the Grecians do ; for the Chaldeans learn it by Tradition from their Ancestors, the Son

¹ , *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 519.

from the Father, who are all in the meantime free from all other public offices and Attendances, and because their Parents are their Tutors, they both learn everything without envy, and rely with more confidence upon the truth of what is taught them ; and being trained up in this Learning from their very childhood, they become most famous Philosophers." ¹ It should be borne in mind that this was the picture of the Chaldean priests in the first century B.C., for Diodorus was born in Sicily about 44 B.C., and visited Mesopotamia probably a few years before the birth of Christ. During 8,000 years, the sacred learning and culture of the *Patesis* probably changed very little, as they were the conservative custodians of the ancient religion, and the sacred lore was handed down from father to son, as it is still done in India. They were undoubtedly the descendants of those priestly Brāhmans who accompanied the Cholas to their new colony as their spiritual guides, at the very beginning of the historical era. The fact that the office of the *Patesis* as well as their learning were hereditary lends a strong colour to this view. It is remarkable that the functions of the Babylonian *Patesis* resembled those of the Brāhman priests, as depicted in the *Atharva-veda*, which according to Professor Macdonell " is, in the main, a book of spells and incantations, appealing to the demon-world, and teems with notions of witch-craft, current among the lower grades of the population, and derived from an immemorial antiquity."

Like the chief priests of the temples of Southern India in ancient times, the *Patesis* of ancient Babylonia were the rulers of Provinces and Kingdoms. The *Mahantas* of modern times in India seem to us to be the survivals of a similar system that was in vogue in Ancient India. We know from the *Ṛg-veda* what great influences used to be wielded over kings and rulers by the *Ṛṣis* in Vedic times. Viśvāmitra himself led an army against the Tṛtsus (Rv. iii. 33 and 53) and Vasleṭha; as

¹ Booth's *Translation*, 1700.

bably made the moral sense of the people impervious to the revolting ugliness and immorality of the whole thing. It has been related that women whose appearance was not engaging had sometimes to remain in the temple of Venus "from three to four years unable to accomplish the terms of the Law."

The Dravidians were famous in ancient time for their astronomical knowledge which they undoubtedly derived from the Vedic Aryans, and especially the Papis who had to study the motions of the planets and stars for guiding their ships in the seas. The fact that the ancient Chaldeans also developed the astronomical science to a high degree of perfection strengthens our opinion that the science was taken from India by the Cholas. Like the twelve *Adityas* of the Veda, there were also twelve suns among the Chaldeans, "to each of which," says Diodorus, "they attribute a month, and one Sign of the Twelve in the Zodiack. Through these twelve signs, the Sun, Moon and the other Five Planets run their course. The Sun in a Year's time, and the Moon in the space of a Month. To every one of the Planets they assign their own proper courses which are performed variously in lesser or shorter time according as their several motions are quicker or slower. These stars, they say, have a great influence both as to the good and bad in Men's Nativities."¹ This shows that like the Indians, the Chaldeans were also astrologers.

The Babylonian year, according to Edward Mayer, consisted of simple lunar months (twenty-nine or thirty days) which, as with the Greeks and the Mahomedans, was determined by the course of the moon itself. To make this year coincide with the course of the sun an extra month was intercalated.²

Now in the *R̥gveda* also, we find the calculation of the Lunar year by thirteen months, and of the Solar year by

¹ Booth's *Translation*, 1700.

² *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 365.

twelve months, as will appear from the following translation of a verse (Rv. i. 25, 8):

"He (Varuṇa) in his wisdom, knows the twelve months, each producing a distinctive result, as well as the thirteen months."

The twelve signs of the Zodiac have also been referred to in the following verse (Rv. i. 164, 11):

"The wheel of the well-ordered Âditya which is furnished with twelve spokes is continually moving round the heavens, and never becomes old. O Agni, seven hundred and twenty *mithunas* (pairs) live in this wheel as the sons (of Âditya)." These seven hundred and twenty pairs are evidently the days and nights that make up a year, and the twelve spokes are the twelve months or the twelve signs of the Zodiac.

In verse 48 of the same Sūkta occurs the following enigmatical problem: "Twelve fellies, one wheel and three naves, who knoweth the mystery? In that wheel are three hundred and sixty spokes." The wheel is the ecliptic of the sun; the twelve fellies are the twelve parts that make up the rim—either the twelve months or the twelve signs of the Zodiac, and the three naves are the three principal seasons, *vis.*, summer, winter and the rainy season.

In verse 12 of the same Sūkta, mention has been made of the twelve different characteristics that the sun assumes in the twelve months as well as of his two motions, *vis.*, the *Uttarāyanam* (going to the north), and the *dakṣiṇāyanam* (going to the south).

Though the seasons have been sometimes mentioned as three and sometimes as five, they are ordinarily numbered as six in the R̥gveda, a couple of months being assigned to each; but when there were thirteen lunar months, the seventh season was regarded as single, *i.e.*, not connected with a couple of months (Rv. i. 164, 15). This solitary month or season was called *malimlucha*, and regarded as Inauspicious, as not

forming a *mithuna* or couple. A similar belief also prevailed among the ancient Babylonians with regard to this thirteenth month. "Hugh Winckler has suggested an ingenious theory for the fact that thirteen has always been considered as an unlucky number. In order to make the Babylonian calendrical system of lunar months agree with the solar year, it was necessary to insert an extra month. This thirteenth month was regarded as being in the way and disturbing calculations. So thirteen came to be regarded as a superfluous unlucky number. Another sign of the Zodiac was appointed for this extra month, and this was the sign of the raven." ¹ It would thus be seen that the ancient Babylonians or Chaldeans were greatly influenced not only in religion, but also in astronomy by R̥gvedic culture.

We have seen that the ancient Cholas were great builders—builders not only of canals and ships, but probably also of temples. Southern India is famous from early times for the existence of old massive temples, for the construction of which stone materials could be procured in great plenty. But very probably, the buildings were at first made of wood, as wood suitable for building purposes was abundant. They undoubtedly carried their art to Chaldea, and the Semitic Babylonians and Assyrians were greatly indebted to them for learning and developing it. The *Saits* of Chaldea were a people "who certainly were not descended from a race inter-mixed with Semitic blood." They must have belonged to the same race as the early Chaldeans or Cholas who had first established their colony on the coast of the Persian Gulf. My surmise is that they were the *Seths* or *Sre̥th̥is* of Southern India, who mostly belonged to the enterprising mercantile class, the *Chetties* as they are even to this day called, and went to Chaldea probably at a later period than the invasion of it by the Semites. These *Seths* or *Saits* greatly influenced Babylonian and Assyrian art. "Not until under the *Saits*.....did art rise again to a

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 524.

height which recalled the palmy days of the ancient realm. This early Chaldic art was the mother of that of Babylonia and Assyria, and the Semites of Babylon and Asshur proved themselves diligent students, gifted imitators, who gave to their works also the stamp of their own genius; but they were never more than students and imitators; they never produced anything original, which might stand in equality by the side of early Chaldic art. The Semitic race occupies one of the foremost positions in the history of civilisation, and is highly talented. But in architecture and sculpture it has always worked in close connection with foreign masters, and never produced anything really great by itself. The further it goes from the ancient centres, where the great tradition of the former so highly developed art still lived on, the more unskilful becomes its production in the field. Assyria where the Semitic blood was purer than in Babylonia, and which was certainly surpassed in art by the latter, Phœnicia, Palestine and Arabia are proofs of this.....Considered as artists, the Babylonians and Assyrians stand foremost among the Semites, but they are indebted for this to the early Chaldeans." ¹

We thus see that it was the ancient Chaldeans who influenced, nay, laid the very foundations of the Babylonian and Assyrian civilisations in all their phases—*viz.*, agriculture, arts, industries, architecture, natural science, religion and philosophy. That the Chaldeans, and latterly the Saites were peoples entirely different from the Semites is admitted on all hands. I have endeavoured in this chapter (as briefly as it has been possible for me to do so) to prove that they were Indians who came to Chaldea from Southern India, and probably belonged to the Chola tribe of the Dravidian race, who in their turn received their culture and civilisation from the Vedic Aryans; that they founded a colony with the help of Papis on the coasts of the Persian Gulf near the mouth of the

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, pp. 346-347.

Tigris and the Euphrates, which they called Kengi, and which was also called Sumer (Sumer being probably a corruption of the Sanskrit word *Sa-maru* which literally means the land contiguous to the desert), or Chaldea; that they spread their culture first among the aboriginal savage tribes, and afterwards among the barbarous Semites when they conquered the country and established their supremacy over it; and that the Semites, as apt pupils, were able to assimilate Chaldean culture and founded famous empires at the early dawn of the historical age, about ten thousand years ago. The whole of Western Asia and Southern Europe were indebted to Babylonia and Assyria (as also to Egypt) for their early culture and civilisation. As a writer says: "If the earlier walls of the Temple of Bel (Baal) at Nippur really date from 6,000 or 7,000 years B.C., as the records seem to prove, there was a continuous powerful empire in Mesopotamia for at least five or six thousand years. The civilisation of Greece, of Rome, or of any modern state seem mere mushroom growth in comparison." ¹

If the civilisation of Chaldea be proved to be nearly ten thousand years old, how older was the civilisation of the Cholas of Southern India? And how older again was the R̥gvedic civilisation that was taken to Southern India after the partial disappearance of the Rajputana Sea? These are questions which cannot be definitely answered. The age of the early R̥gvedic civilisation goes back to a period of time which is lost in the impenetrable darkness of the past—to which thousands of years can be safely assigned, without one being accused of romancing wildly. The Chaldean priests told Diodorus that at the time when Alexander the Great was in Asia, their civilisation had been 470,000 years old. This appeared incredible to Diodorus, as it undoubtedly would to all men of modern times. But if the priests were of Aryan extraction, as there is every reason to believe they

¹ *Ibid*, Vol. I, p. 319.

were, the tradition of the hoary antiquity of their civilisation would be partly justified and corroborated by the extremely old age of the Rgvedic civilisation, of which they were the inheritors. We should, in this connection, recall to mind the tradition current among the Phœnicians who told Julius Africanus that they had been in Phœnicia for nearly 30,000 years. If there is any element of truth in this tradition, the Chaldean civilisation in Mesopotamia must be older than 10,000 years.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER XII.

A FEW IMPORTANT NOTES.

(a) The Papis and the Dravidians.

Long before the complete disappearance of the Rajputana Sea about 7500 B.C., as asserted by Mr. V. B. Katkar, the Aryan merchants, *e.g.*, the Papis, must have established trade-relations with the aboriginal inhabitants of the Deccan, especially those who lived on the sea-coasts. This contact of the two peoples undoubtedly resulted in the uplift of the latter under Aryan influence and tutelage. The civilising process of the Dravidians was further accelerated, when the drying up of the bed of the Rajputana Sea facilitated the free immigration of the Aryan colonists to the South.

(b) Yima's emigration to the Arctic region from Airyana Vaejo.

Mr. B. G. Tilak has identified Manu's Flood with the invasion of Airyana Vaejo by Ice. But probably the two events were not at all identical. Airyana Vaejo must have been destroyed through some other causes, *vis.*, the advent of the last Glacial Epoch which, according to American Geologists, lasted down to 8,000 B.C., after which the Post-Glacial Epoch commenced. Yima's emigration to the Arctic region whose present inclement climate, according to American Geologists, "dates from the Post-Glacial period," must therefore have taken place a few millenniums ago before 8000 B.C. When the Post-Glacial epoch came, the climate of Airyana Vaejo became temperate, enabling Zoroaster and his followers to re-settle in the lost and abandoned "Paradise," and the climate of Sapta-Sindhu also changed from cold to hot, due probably to the complete disappearance of the Rajputana Sea, subsequent to 7500 B.C. Xanthos of Lydia's estimate about the age of Zoroaster who was supposed by him to have flourished 6,000 years before the expedition of Xerxes, as well as Aristotle's similar calculation, seem to be approximately correct. The Zend-Avesta also must have been as old as that period.

(c) The Papia and the Chaldeans.

The Aryan sea-going merchants used to visit the coasts of the Deccan and of the Persian Gulf from a few millenniums earlier than 7500 B.C. The Cholas and the Pandyas had already been civilised by them. They established colonies with their help in Mesopotamia and Egypt, and also independently in Syria.

(d) Mann's Flood and the Babylonian Flood.

Manu's Flood must have taken place about 7500 B. C. or later. The Babylonian Flood was not identical with it, and was probably a myth. The legend of Manu's Flood may have been carried to Mesopotamia by the Aryan and Dravidian colonists. Ilā was a region in Kashmir, known to the R̥gvedic Aryans as the best of regions, where Manu's ship later on was stranded after the Flood. Ilā has been described in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa as Manu's daughter. It had been known to him before and he probably lived there; but he also appeared to have a hermitage on the shore of the Rajputana Sea when the Flood occurred. His ship was probably carried up to Ilā by a stupendous tidal wave along some flooded valley of a Punjab river that has its source in the Kashmir mountains.

(e) Dravidian colonisation of the Punjab.

After the Punjab had land-connection with the Deccan, there must have been an influx of enterprising Dravidians, mostly merchants, into the Punjab, who established trade-centres at different places of the Indus-valley and other river-valleys, founding flourishing towns and ports. Most of the Vedic Aryans had probably withdrawn to remoter and safer parts of the country after the Great Flood. Harappa in the Punjab and Mahenjo-daro in Sind may have been Dravidian colonies, having direct trade-relations with Sumeria and other countries, as the recent archaeological finds in those places go to establish. Most of the Vedic Aryans, as already stated, had been gradually leaving the Punjab and advancing towards the east, occupying the newly formed Gangetic plains and founding flourishing kingdoms and cities therein. The ancient relics of Dravidian and Sumerian civilisations, found in the course of archaeological excavations in these two places, do not at all prove that these civilisations were pre-Aryan. The finds of graves and urns containing ashes do not also point to their un-Aryan character. The R̥gveda clearly mentions the existence of the customs of burial, cremation, and ceremonial burial of ashes in urns, among the ancient Aryans. (Vide *R̥gvedic Culture* Ch. X). Probably the population in these trade-centres was mixed, consisting of Aryans, Dravidians and other foreign peoples, speaking different languages and observing different religious customs. This fact has been very likely referred to in the following verse of the *Atharva-veda* (xii, 1, 45).

जनं विभ्रती बहुधा विनायसं
नाना धर्मासं वृथिवी यवीकसम् ।

CHAPTER XIII.

INDO-ARYAN INFLUENCE ON THE CIVILISATION OF ANCIENT EGYPT.

European scholars are not agreed as to which of the two civilisations, the Egyptian and the Babylonian, was more ancient than the other. Some claim for the former the earliest antiquity, while others assert that it was the Babylonian civilisation that influenced the Egyptian. There can be no doubt that there was free intercourse in ancient times between Egypt and Babylonia, and it was within the bounds of probability that both the civilisations exerted mutual influence upon each other, without the one effacing the individual characteristics of the other. In one point, however, all scholars are agreed, *viz.*, that both exerted a tremendous influence over the early civilisation of Europe, to which they gave not only a shape, but also a life whose vigour still continues unabated, dominating the civilisations of nearly the whole of the modern world.

"In this place (Egypt)," says Dr. Adolf Erman, "there early developed a civilisation which far surpassed that of other nations, and with which only that of far-off Babylonia, where somewhat similar conditions obtained, could in any degree vie."¹ Elsewhere he says: "Even under the Old Kingdom, Egypt is a country in a high state of civilisation; a centralised government, a high level of technical skill, a religion in exuberant development, an art that had reached its zenith, a literature that strives upward to its culminating point—this it is that we see displayed in its monuments. It is an early blossom, put forth by the human race at a time when other nations were wrapped up in their winter sleep. In ancient Babylonia alone, where conditions equally favourable prevailed, the nation of the

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World* Vol. I, pp. 57-58.

Sumerians reached a similar height."¹ Further on, the Professor says: "In the future as in the past, the feeling with which the multitude regards the remains of Egyptian antiquity will be one of awe-struck reverence. Nevertheless, another feeling would be more appropriate, a feeling of grateful acknowledgment and veneration, such as one might feel for the ancestor who had founded his family and endowed it with a large part of its wealth. For, though we are seldom able to say with certainty of any one thing in our possession that it is a legacy we have inherited from the Egyptians, yet no one who seriously turns his attention to such objects can now doubt that a great part of our heritage comes from them. In all the implements which are about us now-a-days, in every art and craft which we practise now, a large and important element has descended to us from the Egyptians. And it is no less certain that we owe to them many ideas and opinions of which we can no longer trace the origin, and which have long come to seem to us the natural property of our own minds."²

These observations may justly apply to the civilisation of the modern nations of Europe, but certainly not to that of some of the oldest nations of Asia, *vis.*, the Vedic Aryans, the Dravidians, and probably the Chinese. They also go to show how European savants in their eagerness to acknowledge their debt of gratitude to an ancient people who were the neighbours of the European nations, and from whom they derived their civilisation directly, have been led to overlook the just claims of other nations, far older than the Egyptians and the Babylonians, to be regarded as the real founders of those civilisations that blossomed forth in ancient Egypt and Babylonia. It is, we are afraid, blind prejudice that has narrowed and circumscribed their vision, and prevented them from taking that broad outlook on the ancient world, which

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 59.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 69.

is the natural outcome of a calm and dispassionate mind, capable of studying the histories of all ancient peoples on a comparative basis, and making a general survey of them by a sweep of clear and far-sighted vision. Such a mind has yet to appear; and when it does appear, the history of the ancient world will certainly have to be re-cast, and written anew.

Egypt is the lower valley of the Nile, and is bounded on the east and west by desert land. Between the two deserts, occupying a breadth of from 15 to 33 miles lies the depression forming the fruitful valley of the Nile. On the north is the Mediterranean Sea, and on the south is a chain of mountains through which the river Nile flows in cataracts, the "First Cataract" forming the southern boundary of Egypt, beyond which is the Nubian sandstone plateau. Egypt is thus totally shut off from the rest of Africa. It is the narrowest country in the world. Embracing an expanse of 570 miles in length, it does not contain more than 12,000 square miles of fertile land, that is to say, it is not larger than the kingdom of Belgium.

This country was called "Kamit" (black country) by the ancient inhabitants. "The name of Egypt in hieroglyphics is Kem...The sense is 'black land,' Egypt being so called from the blackness of its cultivable soil."¹ But the country was called by the Greeks *Aigyptos*, which name first occurs in the Homeric writings. In the *Odyssey*, it is the name of the Nile (Feminine). But it was afterwards transferred to the country watered by the river. No satisfactory Egyptian or Semitic origin has been proposed for the word. "The probable origin is the Sanskrit root 'gup' 'to guard' whence may have been formed *āgupta* 'guarded about.'"²

"Semitic people call Egypt, we know not why, *Misr* or *Musr* (Hebrew Mizraim, the termination being a very common

¹ *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. VII, p. 700 (Ninth Edition).

² *Ibid.*, p. 700.

one with the names of localities). In its Arabian form *Masr*, the word, at the present day, has become the indigenous name of the country and of its capital which we call Cairo."¹ The river Nile was called by the ancient Egyptians *Hapi* or *Aur*. "The Greek and Roman name *Neilos* is certainly not traceable to either of the Egyptian names of the river, nor does it seem philologically connected with the Hebrew ones. It may be like *schichor* indicative of the colour of the river, for we find in Sanskrit *nīla* 'blue,' probably especially 'dark blue,' also even black, as *nīla panka* 'black mud.'"²

From the above extracts, it would appear that the names, Egypt and Nile, were respectively imposed upon the land and the river by the Greeks, or by a people whose language was of Sanskrit origin. But the names *Kamiš* and *Hapi* can also be traced to Sanskrit words. From the etymological meaning of the word *Kamiš* (black soil), it seems to us that it was derived from the Sanskrit roots *ku* "black" (in a physical sense as in *ku-rūpa*) and *mit* "soil," and the word *Hapi* appears to be a mere corruption of the Sanskrit word *Āpa* meaning water. The names *Aigyptos* and *Neilos* were probably given afterwards by the Greeks as further descriptive of the country which was well guarded about from the outer world, and of the river whose water looked dark-blue. Thus both the original and the subsequent names of the land and the river were undoubtedly given by peoples whose language was derived from or allied to Sanskrit. The Semitic names *Musr* may also have been derived from the Sanskrit word *Misra* (mixed), to denote the people of mixed origin who lived in the country.

Egyptologists are not agreed as to the ethnographical place of the ancient Egyptians. While philologists and historians assume a relation with the neighbouring Asiatic races, separating the Egyptian by a sharp line of distinction from

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 84.

² *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. VII p. 705 (Ninth Edition).

the Negro race, ethnologists and biologists have defined them as genuine children of Africa, who stood in indisputable physical relation with the races of the interior of the continent. But "a careful comparison leads to the conclusion that in ancient, as in modern Egypt, there are two co-existent types: one resembling the Nubian more closely, who is naturally more strongly represented in Upper Egypt than in Memphis and Cairo; and one sharply distinguished from him, whom we may define as pure Egyptian. Midway between these two stands a hybrid form represented in numerous examples and sufficiently accounted for by the intermixture of the two races. While the Nubian type is closer akin to the pure Negro type and is indigenous in Africa, we must regard the purely Egyptian type as foreign to the continent; this directs us towards the assumption that the most ancient home of the Egyptians is to be sought in Asia. The Egyptians have depicted themselves, times out of number, on monuments, and enable us clearly enough to recognise their type."¹

Prehistoric Egypt is supposed to have been inhabited by a steatopygous race of "Bushman" type. They were in the palæolithic stage of civilisation, and were superseded by a fresh race of European type—slender, fair-skinned, with long wavy brown hair. Their skull was closely like that of the ancient and modern Algerians of the interior. They seem to have entered the country as soon as the Nile deposits rendered it habitable by an agricultural people. They already made well-formed pottery by hand, knew copper as a rarity, and were clad in goatskins. Entering a fertile country, and mixing probably with the earlier race, they made rapid advance in all their products, and in a few generations they had an able civilisation. After some centuries of culture, a change appears in consequence of the influx of a new people who probably belonged to the same race, as the type is unaltered,

but showing some eastern affinities. These later people seem to have flowed into Egypt from Syria or North Arabia, and it is perhaps to them that the Semitic element in the Egyptian language is due.

"This prehistoric civilisation was much decayed, when it was overcome by a new influx of people, who founded the dynastic rule. These came apparently from the Red Sea, as they entered Egypt in the reign of Coptos, and not either from the north or from the Upper Nile. They were a highly artistic people, as the earliest works attributable to them—the Min Sculptures at Coptos—show better drawing than any work by the older inhabitants, and they rapidly advanced in art to the noble works of the 1st Dynasty. They also brought in the hieroglyphic system, which was developed along with their art. It seems probable that they came up from the Land of Punt, at the south of the Red Sea, and *they may have been a branch of the Punic race in its migrations from the Persian Gulf round by sea to the Mediterranean.* They rapidly subdued the various tribes which were in Egypt, and at least five different types of man are shown on the monuments of their earliest kings. Of these, there were two distinct lines, the kings of Upper and the kings of Lower Egypt."¹

This people, then, were the ancestors of the Egyptians, and it will now be our endeavour to establish their identity with a civilised people of ancient times.

It has been suggested above that they probably formed a branch of the Punic race in its migration from the Persian Gulf round by sea to the Mediterranean. Now, as we have seen in the two previous chapters, the Punic race was identical with the *Paṇis* of *Sapta-Sindhu*, who at first emigrated to the Malabar and Coimondal coasts of Southern India, and thence to the coasts of the Persian Gulf. One branch of the *Paṇis* settled down with the Cholas in Chaldea; while, another branch, very likely accompanied by the *Pāṇḍyas* who lived

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 89.

on the Malabar coast, must have proceeded probably directly from the shores of India to Egypt through the Red Sea. Those of the Papis who preferred a maritime life to settling down as peaceful agriculturists, selected the sea-coast of Syria for establishing a separate and independent colony of their own, and became the ancestors of the Phœnicians of history. The very fact that the name of *Kamit* which the immigrants gave to Egypt, and the name of *Hapi* which they gave to the river Nile, can be traced to words of Sanskrit origin goes to strengthen the view that the new-comers hailed from that part of India which was peopled by a race whose speech was Sanskrit, or who had been influenced by Indo-Aryan civilisation. And this part of India could have been no other than the Malabar coast, peopled by the Pândyas, which was probably called the "Land of the Pândyas," afterwards corrupted in Egypt into the "Land of Punt." It would be interesting to note here that among the earlier students of the subject of the origin of the Egyptians, "Heeren was prominent in pointing out an alleged analogy between the form of skull of the Egyptian and that of the Indian races. He believed in the Indian origin of the Egyptians." ¹ One of the most recent authorities, Professor Flinders Petrie, "Inclines to the opinion that the Egyptians were of common origin with the Phœnicians, and that they came into the Nile region from the land of Punt, across the Red Sea." ² That Heeren was right in his belief, and Petrie in his conjecture, will be clearly proved from an account of the culture and civilisation of the ancient Egyptians themselves, about which we shall write later on. But let us first see what descriptions the Egyptians gave of the Land of Punt.

"Under the name of Punt, the ancient Inhabitants of Kamit understood a distant country, washed by the great sea, full of valleys and hills, rich in ebony and other valuable

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 77.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 77.

woods, in incense, balsam, precious metals and stones, rich also in animals, for there are camelopards, oheetas, panthers, dog-headed apes, and long-tailed monkeys; winged creatures with strange feathers flew up to the boughs of wonderful trees, especially of the incense-tree and cocoanut-palm. Such was the conception of the Egyptian Ophir, doubtless the coast of the modern Somaliland which lies in view of Arabia, though divided from it by the sea." ¹

The writer has undoubtedly noticed some resemblance of the physical characteristics of Somaliland with the above description of the Land of Punt to enable him to identify the latter country with the former. But the above description equally well applies to the Malabar coast of Southern India which is also "a distant country, washed by the great sea, full of valleys and hills, rich in ebony and other valuable woods, etc." The animals mentioned in the above extract are all natives of Southern India, excepting, perhaps, the camelopard which is now a native of Africa. Southern India having been in ancient times joined with Africa, the camelopard, or the giraffe, also might have been one of its fauna, though it subsequently became extinct; or the animal might have been the *Sambhar* or the *Nilghau* which was probably mistaken for, or likened with the giraffe. The incense was probably derived from the sandal-wood of the Malabar coast, which was so eagerly sought for in the ancient civilised world. We have seen that sandal, ebony, precious stones, apes, peacocks, etc., used to be brought from the Malabar coast to ancient Babylonia, and as there was an established commercial intercourse between Western Asia and India, it is most likely that ancient Egypt also drew her supplies from that country. The Land of Punt, therefore, could not but be the Malabar Coast of India, "the land of the Pāṇḍyas." With regard to Somaliland, there is no proof that it was inhabited by any civilised people in ancient times, from which they

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 108.

might have immigrated with their Gods and culture. The weight of evidence, therefore, rather leans on the side of India than Somaliland.

"According to the old dim legend, the Land of Punt was the primeval dwelling of the Gods. From Punt, the heavenly beings had, headed by Amen, Horus and Hathor, passed into the Nile Valley. The passage of the Gods had consecrated the coast-lands, which the water of the Red Sea washed as far as Punt, and whose very name Gods' land (Ta-nater) recalls the legend. Amen is called Haq, that is 'King of Punt,' Hathor simply 'Lady and Ruler of Punt,' while Hor was spoken of as 'the holy morning star' *which rises westward from the Land of Punt*. To this same country belongs that idol Bes, the ancient figure of the deity in the Land of Punt, who in frequent wanderings, obtained a footing, not only in Egypt, but in Arabia and other countries of Asia, as far as the Greek islands. The deformed figure of Bes, with its grinning visage, is none other than the benevolent Dionysus (Bacchus) who pilgrimaging through the world dispenses gentle manners, peace and cheerfulness to the nations with a lavish hand."¹

We will try to identify these Gods with the Gods of the Hindu Mythology later on. But it may be said here that Hor or Horus was a corruption of the Sanskrit word *Suryas* (the first *s* being corruptly pronounced as *h*), and that this 'God' was spoken of by the Egyptians as "the holy morning star which rises westward from the land of Punt." This land, therefore, was the "the land of the rising Sun," so far as the Egyptians were concerned, and cannot certainly be identified with Somaliland which was situated far off to the *south* of Egypt. The land of Punt was undoubtedly situated somewhere to the *east* of Egypt, which also goes to confirm our supposition that the land was no other than the Malabar coast of India. The allegation that "the water of the Red Sea

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 108.

washed the coast-lands as far as Punt" can be explained by the fact that the "Erythraean Sea," formerly identified with the modern Arabian Sea, was probably translated into the "Red Sea" which name is now only confined to the sea of that denomination and is not applied to the Arabian Sea extending as far as the western coasts of India. This confusion has probably led the writer of the above extract to locate the Land of Punt to the south of the present Red Sea in Somaliland.

In this connection, it would be interesting to mention the conclusion of Egyptologists that "the Egyptians of history are probably a fusion of an indigenous white race of north-eastern Africa and *an intruding people of Asiatic origin.*"¹ If these intruding people had originally come from Somaliland, they would undoubtedly have been put down as "a people of African origin." It may be argued that they were an Asiatic people who came to Egypt from some part of Asia through Somaliland. But this would not help to identify the latter country with the Land of Punt which was traditionally and undoubtedly the original home of the Asiatic intruders. We have already said that Heeren clearly believed in the Indian origin of the Egyptians, and Petrie thinks that they were a branch of the Phœnicians, or the Punic race, or the Punites who came to Egypt through the Red Sea. This leads us to infer that the Land of Punt was the Malabar coast of Southern India.

It is said that it was under Pharaoh Sankh-ka-Ra that "the first Ophir-voyage to Punt and Ophir was accomplished."² With regard to the identity of the land of Ophir, another writer says: "Ophir was the general name for the rich countries of the south, lying on the African, Arabian and Indian coasts, as far as at that time known. From there the Phœnicians had already obtained vast treasures by caravans; but they now

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 66.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 108.

opened a maritime communication with them, in order to lighten the expense of transport, and to procure their merchandise at best hand. The name of Ophir was common even in the time of Moses, and was then applied to those southern countries only known by common report. It was therefore now spoken of as a well-known name and country, and it may be fairly presumed that when the Phœnicians entered upon this new line of trade, *they only took possession of a previously well-established system*, since it was a regular, settled navigation, and not a voyage of discovery. From its taking three years to perform, it would appear to have been directed to a distant region; but if we consider the half-yearly monsoons, and that the vessels visited the coasts of Arabia, Ethiopia, and the *Malabar coast of India*, and also that the expression 'in the third year,' may admit of an interpretation that would much abridge the total duration, the distance will not appear so great. The commodities which they imported were ivory, precious stones, ebony and gold, to which may be added apes and peacocks; all satisfactorily proving that they visited the countries just mentioned, especially Ethiopia, and probably India." ¹

I need hardly say that there could be no *probability* in the case of India, but *absolute certainty*; for it was from the shores of India that the Papis, the ancestors of the Phœnicians, had originally emigrated to the coast of the Persian Gulf, and thence to Syria. The route of navigation to India was perfectly known to them, as it was they who had established it. It is a mistake, therefore, to suppose that they "only took possession of a previously well-established system." Be that as it may, there can be no question that the term Ophir included India also among the Southern countries, and that the Land of Punt was especially the name of India, or more correctly speaking, of the Malabar coast which was the land of the Pāṇdyas. From all these considerations, and particularly

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. II, p. 333.

from the opinions of Heeren and Petrie, my surmise is that a branch of the Pāṇdyas, headed or led by the Pāṇis, immigrated to Egypt and settled there. This surmise will be immensely strengthened by a striking similarity of social and religious customs prevailing among the Egyptians and the Indians, about which I will now write.

The Egyptian religion, like the Ṛgvedic religion, was based upon natural phenomena and manifestations. Their Gods were mostly Solar deities, and the name of their Sun-god was Horus, which, as we have already pointed out, was a corruption of the Sanskrit word *Suryas* (Gk. Sirius). The name of another God was Osiris and that of his consort Isis, which are identified by some with the Sanskrit words *Īśvara* and *Īśī*. But I have reason to suppose that the Egyptian word Osiris is a corruption of the Sanskrit word *A-suryas*, which literally means 'the Sun devoid of his solar character' (the *not*-Sun), or as the Egyptians described the deity, "the Sun of the night," when he loses his lustre, and becomes, to all intents and proposes, quite dead. The Ṛgveda has described the Sun of the night as "the sleeping sun" (Rv. x. 86, 21), the idea being the same as the Egyptian idea, as sleep, in the words of the greatest English poet, is "every day's death." Isis, the consort of Osiris, is no other than the Vedic *Uṣas* (Gk. Eos). In the Ṛgveda occur many verses in which *Uṣas* has been described as the consort of the Sun who eagerly covets and follows her, "as a bull follows a cow." There was another Egyptian God whose name was *Amen* or *Imu*. This God, however, was not a visible one like Horus, but a deity quite imperceptible and inconceivable. This God was also called *Ra*, and he "was the greatest God of all, 'the king of Gods.' Amen was sometimes identified with Ra, and the tendency was towards the recognition of a most important central God who, to a certain extent, ruled over and controlled the hierarchy of the lesser deities."¹ Ra

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 220.

was "the uncreated, the autocrat of the heavens. Horus, the Sun-god, who fought each day in the interest of mankind against the malignant demon Set or Sutekh, and who was overcome each night only to revive again, and renew the combat with each succeeding morning was a God of great and widely recognised power. Yet it appears that he was not quite identified, as has sometimes been supposed, with the Supreme God Ra. To the latter attached a certain intangibility, a certain vagueness inconsistent with the obvious visual reality of the Sun-god or with the being of any other God whose qualities could be explicitly defined. In the very nature of the case, the conception of Ra was vague. He presented the last analysis of thought from which the mind recoils dazed, and acknowledging itself baffled."¹

The Ra, therefore resembled the Vedic Brahman "the one without a second," who transcends the three *gunas*, or the vehicles of manifestation as the Creator, the Preserver and the Destroyer, whose very nature is Supreme Bliss or Beatitude (*ānandam*) and from whom "words, with the mind, not reaching, recoil baffled."² This Vedic conception of the Supreme Being perfectly agrees with the Egyptian conception of Ra. Some one asked "Had the Egyptians any idea of one God? In other words, is their religion a complex structure raised upon monotheistic foundation?" The Egyptian religious writings are held by M. De Rouge to give an affirmative answer to this question. "They speak of one Supreme Being, Self-existent, Self-producing, the Creator of Heaven and Earth, called the double God or double-being, as the parent of a second manifestation. From the idea of a Supreme Deity, at once father and mother, producing a second form, probably originated a first triad, like the triads of father, mother and son, frequent in Egyptian Mythology."³ The double God was undoubtedly the *Nirguṇa Brahman* and

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 221.

² *Taittiriya Upaniṣad*, II. 4.

³ *Ency. Brit.*, Vol. VII, p. 714 (Ninth Edition).

the *Saguṣa Brahman* of the Aryans. Hara or Siva, in later Hindu Mythology, represented the Nirguṣa Brahman, the Unmanifested Being, and the Egyptian Ra was probably a corruption of the Sanskrit word Hara, the *ha* (ह) having been silent in Egyptian pronunciation. Amen or Imu who was identified with Ra was probably a corruption of the Sanskrit mystic word *Aum*, the emblem of the three *guṣas* or manifestations of Brahman (Taitt. Upa., I. 8), the gradual cadence of the last syllable signifying the merging of the Manifested or Finite (*vyakta*) into the Unmanifested or Infinite (*a-vyakta*), whose name in the later Hindu Mythology was Hara, corresponding to the Egyptian Ra.

In the *R̥gveda* we find the description of a constant fight going on between the Power of Light, and the Power of Darkness, the latter overcoming the former in the night, and being overcome again by its adversary in the day. Indra or Sūryas represents the Power of Light, and Vṛtra, the Power of Darkness. The latter is a malevolent power, working mischief in the world, yet bearing in the *R̥gveda* the title of *Deva* or bright (Rv. i. 32, 12). This, at first sight, leads to some confusion in our mind about his identity. We have identified this *Deva* in his form of a cloud as the Lightning. But when there is no cloud but simple darkness, we feel some difficulty in identifying him. The *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* however helps to remove this difficulty, when it says: "The Sun that gives us heat and light is Indra, and the Moon is Vṛtra. The Sun is like the Moon's natural and eternal enemy." (I. 5. 3. 18). *Uṣas* or the Dawn has been described in the *R̥gveda* as the wife of the Sun (probably, the Sun of the night), but sometimes also as his mother (undoubtedly, the mother of the morning Sun, the *Kumāra* or the son, who appeared to have been produced by her). *Nakta* or Night has been described in the *R̥gveda* as the wife of the Moon, and *Uṣas* and *Nakta* (the Dawn and the Night) as twin sisters, nay, the one and the same deity with different aspects.¹ If

¹ Rv. i. 123, 7 and 9; Rv. i. 124, 8.

we remember these principal figures of the Vedio Mythology, we shall be able to understand clearly its resemblance with the Egyptian Mythology.

Osiris, as we have said, was identified by the Egyptians with "the Sun of the night." "He has a life-long conflict with a malevolent power, his brother or son, Seth, who is not wholly evil...The opposition of Osiris and Seth is a perpetual conflict. Osiris is vanquished. He is cut in pieces, and submerged in the water. Watched by his sisters, Isis, his consort, and Nephthys, the consort of Seth, he revives. Horus, his son, avenges him...and destroys the power of Seth, but does not annihilate him. The myth is a picture of the daily life of the Sun, combating Darkness, yet at last succumbing to it, to appear again in renewed splendour, as the young Horus, a solar God, triumphs over Seth. It is also a picture of human life, its perpetual conflict, and final seeming destruction, to be restored in the youth of a brighter existence. In this view suffering is not wholly evil, but has its beneficent aspect in the accomplishment of final god...We may regard Osiris as the Sun of the night, and so the protector of those who pass away into the realm of Shades."¹

Nephthys or Night, in the above extract is the same as the Vedic *Nakta*.¹ Isis, as we have already said, is the same as the Sanskrit *Uṣas* or Greek *Eos*. *Seth*, is identical with the Sanskrit word *śveta*, meaning *white*, the colour of the Moon. Horus (*Sūryas*) is the son of Osiris (*A-sūryas*), the dead Sun of the night, who is born again in him. The following Gods are identified with Osiris in the Theban system: (1) Seb (Vedio Savitr who is also the Sun of the night, and the Paurāṇic *Śiva*), his consort being Nut (Sanskrit, *Nakta* or Night), the sister of Isis, or Isis herself in another form—the Paurāṇic *Kālī* (or *Kālarātri*); (2) Hesiri or Osiris, his consort being Hes or Isis (Vedic *Uṣas*, Paurāṇic *Uṣā*); (3) Har (Paurāṇic *Hara*), his consort being Hat-har (Sanskrit, *Hotri* or *Sāvitrī*). Isis is

¹ *Eucy. Brit.*, Vol. VII, p. 716 (Ninth Edition).

also identified with Prakṛti (Sanskrit, *Prakṛti*), and Sekhet (Sanskrit, *Sakti*), and is called "the ancient," as she is called in the *Īgveda*, in as much as there was nothing but darkness in the beginning, out of which evolved Light and the Shining Ones. Hence she was called by the Egyptian word *Mut* (Sanskrit *Mātā*, mother), *i.e.*, the mother of the Gods. Amen or Amu (corrupted from Sanskrit *Aum*, the mystic word representing the Three Principles of Creation, Preservation and Destruction) was called by the Egyptians "Lord of Punt," as Hathor or *Sāvitṛī*, the root-*mantra* on which the structure of the Vedic or Hindu religion is based, was called the "Lady and Ruler of Punt." This probably meant that the religious cult of the Egyptians originally belonged to, and came from Punt. The God Bes was undoubtedly the Vedic *Viṣṇu*, the Protector of the world, who, according to the Egyptians, dispensed "gentle manners, peace and cheerfulness to the nations with lavish hands." This God afterwards came to be identified with Bacchus, and his worship degenerated into orgies, at which the lowest human passions were given a free indulgence. These orgies appear to be the result of a misinterpretation of the esoteric meaning attached to the autumnal and spring festivals (the *Rāsa* and the *Dola*) held in India to celebrate the union of Kṛṣṇa (Incarnation of Viṣṇu) with his devout worshippers, the Gopikās. But the Bacchanial festival was of a later date than the worship of Bes in ancient Egypt and was probably introduced into Western Asia from India long after the Pāṇḍyas had immigrated to Egypt.

From the above account of the Egyptian Gods, and subsequent account to be given in its proper place, it would appear that the immigration of the Indians (the aryanised Pāṇḍyas) to Egypt must have taken place at a period of transition from the Vedic to the Paurāṇic faith in India, in as much as we find not only some of the Vedic gods and Vedic sacrifices (notably the bull-sacrifice) in Egypt, but also some of the Gods and

Goddesses of purely Paurāṇic Mythology, who were undoubtedly the later developments of Vedic deities and the myths attached to them. This striking resemblance between the theogonies and mythologies of the ancient Egyptians and the Indo-Aryans would alone prove the Egyptians to be of Indian origin, even if we exclude from our consideration the similarity of skulls of the Indian and Egyptian races, discovered by Heeren. We shall find that in social, religious and political institutions also, the Egyptians pre-eminently resembled the Indians.

With the Egyptians, as with the ancient Aryans, "the king was the representative of the deity, and his royal authority was directly derived from the Gods. He was the head of the religion and of the state; he was the judge and law-giver; and he commanded the army and led it to war. It was his right and his office to preside over the sacrifices, and pour out libations to the gods, and whenever he was present, he had the privilege of being the officiating high priest."¹

As with the Indo-Aryans, so with the Egyptians, "the sceptre was hereditary; but in the event of a direct heir failing, the claims for succession were determined by proximity of parentage, or by right of marriage. The king was always either of the priestly or military class, and the prince also belonged to one of them."² In Ṛgvedic society, we have noticed *R̥sis* or priests, like Vasiṣṭha and Viśvāmitra, wielding

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 199.

Cf. Chap. VII of the *Manu Samhitā* :

"The Lord created the king for the protection of all mankind, from the essences drawn from Indra, Vāyu (Wind), Yama (Lord of Death), the Sun, the Moon, Varuṇa and Kuvera (Lord of wealth). The king is a great deity in the shape of man. The king is the wielder of the sceptre, the leader, and the governor, and is the representative of Dharma, and the four *Āśramas*. He should perform the sacrifices and make various gifts. (verses 3, 4, 8, 17, 79, etc.)

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 190.

great influence over the kings, if not actually wielding the sceptres. We have also instances of warrior-priests not only in Vedic times but also in the later ages. In the *Mahābhārata*, Brahmins like Droṇa, Kṛpā, and Aśvatthāma, were renowned warriors, and in the earlier age Bhārgava, the son of the sage Bṛhgu, extirpated the Kṣatriyas twenty times and one. This shows that in ancient Aryan society, the occupations of priests and warriors were interchangeable. Viśvāmitra, who had originally belonged to the warrior class, became afterwards a famous Ṛṣi, and Vedic priest. A similar condition prevailed in ancient Egyptian society: "The army or the priesthood were the two professions followed by all men of rank.....The law too was in the hands of the priests, so that there were also two professions. Most of the kings, as might be expected, were of the military class, and during the glorious days of Egyptian history, the younger princes generally adopted the same profession. Many held offices also in the royal household, some of the most memorable of which were fan-bearers on the right of their father, royal scribes, superintendents of granaries or of the land and treasures of the king; and they were generals of the cavalry, archers and other corps, or admirals of the fleet."¹

In ancient India, the Brahmins or priests not only framed the laws, but interpreted and administered them as judges. They were also selected as ministers on account of their learning and experience. As regards the office of fan-bearers held by the Princes in ancient Egypt, it is to be noted that a similar custom prevailed in ancient India also. In Vālmiki's *Rāmāyaṇa* (Book VI, Chap. 130), we find a picture of the Princes Bharata and Lakṣmaṇa acting as fan-bearers to King Rāma, and Prince Satrugṇa holding the royal umbrella over the king's head. As regards the high military offices, they were held by the royal Princes in India, as in Egypt.

¹ *Do.* Vol. I, p. 199.

"The Egyptians," says a writer, "are said to have been divided into castes, *similar to those of India*; but though a marked line of distinction was maintained between the different ranks of society, they appear rather to have been classes than castes, and a man did not necessarily follow the precise profession of his father. Sons, it is true, usually adopted the same profession or trade as the parent, and the rank of each depended on his occupation; but the children of a priest frequently chose the army for their profession, and those of a military man could belong to the priest-hood."¹ It would thus appear that the Egyptian caste-system like that of the Aryans in Vedic times was elastic, and not crystallised as it afterwards became in India.

Says the same writer: "The priests and military men held the highest position in the country after the family of the king, and from them were chosen his ministers and confidential advisers 'the wise counsellors of Pharaoh,' and all the principal officers of the state."²

"The priests consisted of various grades—There were the king's own priests. They acknowledged him (the king) as the head of the religion, and the state; nor were they above the law; no one of them, not even the king himself, could govern according to his own arbitrary will."³

The king, in ancient India also, was never absolute nor autocratic. He was guided by three councils, *vis.*, (i) the council of *R̥vīks* or Priests, (ii) the council of *Mantrīs* or Ministers, and (iii) the council of *Amātyas*, or Executive officers, each in charge of a department, whose number varied from 8 to 33; and the king had to accept the decision of the majority of his councillors.⁴ Manu has distinctly said that

¹ *Ibid*, Vol. I, p. 200.

² *Ibid*, Vol. I, p. 200.

³ *Ibid* Vol. I, p. 200.

⁴ *Vide* my article on "Limited Monarchy in Ancient India" in the *Modern Review* (Cal.), Vol. II, p. 346.

the king who governs according to his arbitrary will and not harmoniously with the constitution, and is actuated by low selfish desires is killed by the constitution itself.¹ This constitution was impersonated in the *Daśa* or sceptre, which the king himself wielded.

As in India, so in Egypt, "next in rank to the priests, were the military."²

The mode of warfare among the Egyptians "was not like that of nations in their infancy, or in a state of barbarism; and it is evident, from the number of prisoners, that they spared the prostrate who asked for quarter. Those who sued for mercy and laid down their arms were spared and sent bound from the field."³

This seems to be a faint echo, or imitation of the custom that prevailed in Ancient India. Says Manu: "The warrior shall not kill his adversary with any weapon concealed in a wooden sheath (which the latter never suspects to be a deadly weapon), with *śarpā*, or weapon tipped with poison, or made red-hot by fire. Nor shall he kill an enemy who is on foot, who is a hermaphrodite, who joins his hands in supplications of mercy, whose hair has been dishevelled, who is resting and says 'I am thine,' i.e., surrenders himself; nor an adversary who is asleep, has doffed his mail-coat, is semi-naked (as in sleep or while resting), is unarmed, non-combatant, and is either a spectator, or fighting with some one else; nor him from whose hands his weapons have fallen, who is overwhelmed with grief (in consequence of the death of a comrade or near relative in the fighting line), who has been dangerously wounded or terror-stricken and not engaged in fighting—always remembering that this is the *Dharma* (canon) followed by all right-minded men."⁴

¹ *Manu Samhita*, Ch. VII, 27-28.

² *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 201.

³ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 208.

⁴ *Manu*, Chap. VII, 90-93.

This was what the ancient Aryans understood by "honest and clean fighting." Whether this high standard of the mode of warfare is maintained even by the present civilised nations of the world who always boast of the high state of their civilisation, I leave my readers to judge.

I will now mention some of the customs of the ancient Egyptians, which will be found to bear a close resemblance to those of the ancient Aryans. Says Herodotus : " Those Egyptians who live in the cultivated parts of the country are of all whom I have seen the most ingenious, being attentive to the improvement of memory beyond the rest of mankind.¹ To give some idea of their mode of life : for three days successively every month, they use purges, vomits, clysters ; this they do out of attention to their health, being persuaded that the diseases of the body are occasioned by the different elements received as food."²

Herodotus writes upon another custom of the Egyptians, which is essentially Aryan. Says he : " The Egyptians surpass all the Greeks, Lacedæmonians excepted, in the reverence which they pay to age : if a young person meets his senior, he instantly turns aside to make way for him ; if a senior enters an apartment, the youth always rise from their seats ; this ceremony is observed by no other of the Greeks. When the Egyptians meet, they do not speak, but make a profound reverence bowing with the hand down to the knee."³ I need not take the trouble of quoting Manu ⁴ to prove the existence of this custom in ancient India, as it is still observable among

¹ The cultivation of memory among the Aryans was most remarkable. As writing was probably not in vogue, they committed to memory the four *Vedas* and the *Smṛtis*, the latter so called, because they were remembered.

² *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 212. In the Hindu Medical works, purging and vomiting have been recognized as means for eliminating all undigested and indigestible elements of food taken, in order to ensure the preservation of health.

³ *Ibid*, Vol. I. p. 213.

⁴ *Manu*, Ch. II, 119-121.

the descendants of the Aryans. "The life-currents of a young man," says Manu, "tend to flow out of his body when an elder comes, and attain only their normal condition when he stands up to accost and relieve him."

Herodotus further says: "Of the Egyptians it is further memorable that they first imagined what month or day was to be consecrated to each deity; they also from observing the days of nativity, venture to predict the particular circumstances of a man's life and death."¹

I need not point out that the custom was similar among the ancient Aryans also. Each month was consecrated to the worship of a particular deity. The months also were named after the movements and ascendancy of certain constellations of stars in the heavens. The particular circumstances of a man's life and death were also predicted by the ancient Hindus from the peculiar situation of the stars and planets at the time of his nativity. The science of astrology was highly developed among the Aryans. The *Bhṛgu Saṃhita* claims to predict not only the events of man's present existence, but also to read the events of his past and future incarnations.

"The Egyptians," says Herodotus, "express aversion to the customs of Greece, and to say the truth, to those of all other nations." In this they essentially resembled the ancient Aryans, with whom all was *Mleccha* that was not Aryan. This term was also applied to those of their own race, who did not conform to their manners and customs, and way of thinking.

"In the treatment of women, they seem to have been very far advanced, beyond other wealthy communities of the same era, having usages very similar to those of modern Europe, and such was the respect shown to women that precedence was given to them over men, and the wives and daughters of kings succeeded to the throne like the male branches of the Royal family.

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 213.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I. p. 214.

Nor was the privilege rescinded even though it had more than once entailed on them the troubles of a contested succession, foreign kings often having claimed a right to the throne, through marriage with an Egyptian princess.....It was a right acknowledged by law, both in private and public life."¹

It should be stated here that women in Ancient India were also held in high esteem, and enjoyed equal freedom with men in many important matters. For instance, ladies with a religious turn of mind composed hymns in praise of the *Devas*, and the most distinguished among them were classed with the *Rsis*, i.e., the seers or sages. They could also take part with men in the discussion of abstruse philosophical questions, make their own choice of husbands or lead a life of celibacy, just as they pleased. They also took up arms, and assisted their husbands in the defence of their hearths and homes, when any need arose. They were the real help-mates and soul-mates of their husbands, shared all their rights and privileges, helped them in the performance of their religious ceremonies, and were the real rulers of their household. The daughter had the same right as the son, and, in the absence of any male issue of her parents, succeeded to their estates as a matter of right. The widow also, if childless, inherited her husband's property, and could adopt a son to perpetuate the line of her husband's family. It is true that we do not find the mention of any lady-ruler in ancient Sanskrit Literature ; but if the claims of ladies to sit on the throne were passed over in favour of the next male heir, it was done more for the sake of expediency than anything else.

Like the Aryans, the Egyptians also had "an abiding faith in the immortality of the soul." They also resembled the Aryans in the observance of many customs. Herodotus says ; "The Egyptians who at other times have their heads

¹ *Ibid*, Vol. I, p. 217.

closely shorn suffer the hair to grow" on the occasions of sorrow and bereavements—a custom which the Hindus observe even to this day. "One of their customs," says Herodotus, "is to drink out of brazen goblets, which it is the universal practice among them to cleanse every day. They are so regardful of neatness that they wear only linen, and that always newly washed. Their priests every third day shave every part of their bodies to prevent vermin or any species of impurity from adhering to those who are engaged in the service of the gods. The priests wash themselves in cold water twice, in the course of the day, and as often in the night."¹ Those who are acquainted with Hindu customs will notice their striking resemblance with these Egyptian customs. Brazen utensils, and gold and silver ones, are regarded by the Hindus to be pure, and any contamination is easily removed by washing them simply.

The Egyptians, like the ancient Aryans, performed the bull-sacrifice. If the Egyptians went from India, about which however there seems to be no doubt, they must have done so at a time when bull-sacrifice was in vogue in the country. Bull-sacrifice was discontinued in India in post-Vedic times, when the ram, the goat and the buffalo took the place of the ox. This shows that the Indians must have emigrated to Egypt several thousand years ago, and the immigrants took the custom with them, which remained intact in Egypt down to a later age, and was probably imitated and adopted by the Semitic race, afterwards.

I will give here a brief account of the bull-sacrifice which, in the selection of the animal, the cutting up of the different parts of the victim, and consigning them to the fire with libations, and the uttering of *mantras* (which Herodotus wrongly understood to be imprecations) over the severed head, resembled the Aryan ritual, with this difference that instead of pouring libations of wine, the Aryans poured libations of

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 213.

ghṛta or melted butter into the Fire. Says Herodotus : "They (the Egyptians) esteem bulls as sacred to Epaphus, which previous to sacrifice are thus carefully examined ; if they can but discover a single black hair in his body, he is deemed impure. Having led the animal destined and marked for the purpose to the altar, they kindle a fire, a libation of wine is poured upon the altar ; the god is solemnly invoked, and the victim then is killed ; they afterwards cut off his head, and take the skin from the carcass ; upon the head, they heap many imprecations."¹

The intestines of the victim were then taken off, leaving the fat and paunch. "They afterwards cut off the legs, the shoulders, the neck, and the extremities of the loin ; the rest of the body is stuffed with the fine bread, honey, raisins, figs, frankincense, and various aromatics ; after this process, they burn it, pouring upon the flame a large quantity of oil. Whilst the victim is burning, the spectators flagellate themselves, having fasted before the ceremony ; the whole is completed by their feasting on the residue of the sacrifice."² The different parts of the carcass of a victim, whether a bull or a horse, used similarly to be thrown into the fire with libations of *ghṛta*, with which cakes, barley, sesamum seeds, etc., were mixed, in ancient India.³ There is evidence, however, in the R̥gveda that the horse-flesh used to be cooked and the meat partaken of by the worshippers with great relish. (Rv. i. 162, 11-13).

Herodotus further says : "All the Egyptians sacrifice bulls without blemish, and calves ; the females are sacred to Isis, and may not be used for this purpose. The divinity is represented under the form of a woman, and as the Greeks paint Io, with horns upon her head ; for this reason, the

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. I, pp. 213 and 223

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 224.

³ Read the account of a horse-sacrifice in the *Rāmāyaṇa*, Bk. I, Canto 14 Verses 31-38.

Egyptians venerate cows far beyond all other cattle." The ox (Apis) was sacred to Osiris, whose soul, according to the Egyptians, passed into the animal. Similarly they probably believed that the soul of Isis also passed into the cow, which accordingly was identified with the goddess herself. But if this was merely the reason for not sacrificing the cow, it would have held equally good with the ox also. As a matter of fact, however, the ox only used to be sacrificed but not the cow, the reason probably having been originally economical, rather than religious. While only a few oxen were sufficient for breeding purposes, the loss of cows by indiscriminate sacrifice or slaughter would have made cattle gradually extinct. Hence only the male animals were selected for sacrifice. The ancient Aryans, however, sometimes sacrificed barren and old cows, from which no multiplication of the breed was expected. It should be noted here that, like the Hindus, the Egyptians also venerated the cow as a sacred animal.

The aloofness in which the Egyptians, like the ancient Hindus, kept themselves from foreigners will be best illustrated by the following quotations:—"Neither will any man or woman among them (the Egyptians) kiss a Grecian, or use a knife or spit or any domestic utensil belonging to a Greek, nor will they eat even the flesh of such beasts as by their law are pure, if it has been cut with a Grecian knife." (Herodotus.)

It seems that some Egyptians preferred the sacrifice of a particular animal to that of another. "Those who worship in the temple of the Theban Jupiter, or belong to the district of Thebes, abstain from sheep, and sacrifice goats."

Like the Hindus, the Egyptians looked upon the hog as an unclean animal, and "if they casually touch one, they immediately plunge themselves, clothes and all, into the water." (Herodotus.) The hatred that the Semites felt for the hog was probably imbibed by them from the ancient Egyptians.

Diodorus says that the Egyptians "adored and worshipped" some animals "even above measure when they are dead, as well as when they are living," and this custom struck him as "most strange and unaccountable," and worthy of enquiry. "These creatures are kept and fed in consecrated ground inclosed, and many great Men provide food for them at great cost and charge." It is generally believed that the teachings of the Buddha in India, which were a loud protest against the custom of animal sacrifice, had much to do with the creation of a revulsion of feeling against it, and the development of kindly sentiments towards all living creatures; and that the reaction of the popular mind was so great that not only were animals protected from torture and slaughter, but large hospitals were established for the treatment of their diseases, and refuges maintained for their protection in old age and in sickness. The fact, however, is overlooked that the advent of a great Teacher becomes impossible unless the ground is previously well prepared for him. The Buddha would not have been able to successfully inculcate the teachings of good will and kindness to all animals, unless the sentiment had already existed in the popular mind. The very fact that the cow, the bull, and some other animals and birds were regarded as sacred by the Aryans from Vedic times pointed to the existence of kindly sentiments in their mind towards those creatures; and though the prevalence of the custom of animal sacrifice seemed, at first sight, to give the lie direct to the real existence of these sentiments, it should be borne in mind that animal-sacrifice had the sanction of Religion from hoary times, which it was impossible for ordinary weak minds to disregard. Who can say that the religious sanction itself was not a makeshift to curb a desire for slaughtering animals for daily food, and to restrict it only to special occasions of religious celebrations, which are generally attended with a series of intricate and difficult ceremonies? It has been mentioned in the *Satapatha Brâhmaṇa* that the Sacrifice, or *Yajna* as it is called, was at first in the cow or bull, from which it went into the

horse, and from the horse it went into the goat, and from the goat it went into the earth, where it found a place in the grains produced by the earth. This anecdote shows the different stages through which Sacrifice had to pass according to the different stages of the mental developments of the people who practised it, till animal-sacrifice was abandoned or sought to be abandoned, and its place was taken up by grains, fruits and flowers dedicated as offerings to the Deity. This undoubtedly points to a remarkable development of moral and spiritual sentiments, which was carried still higher when it was enjoined that purely mental worship of the Deity by the contemplation of all His divine attributes was the best of all forms of worship. If we keep this fact in our mind, the existence of kindly sentiments towards animals simultaneously with the existence of the cruel custom of animal-sacrifice would not at all seem incongruous in certain stages of the development of the human mind. And so both,—the sentiment and the custom—existed side by side, as we see in the case of the ancient Egyptians and the ancient Aryans. The custom, however, was sought to be eradicated in India in the time of the Buddha who was successful in his noble efforts, in a large measure. We need not, therefore, be at all surprised that long long before the Buddha was born, a kindly sentiment towards animals had developed both in ancient India and Egypt to the extent of worshipping and adoring certain dumb creatures of God and keeping and feeding them in "consecrated grounds" enclosed for the purpose. So far, we have noticed such a close resemblance between the ancient Egyptians and the ancient Aryans in their theogony, religious practices, social customs, and political institutions as to lead us to the irresistible conclusion that they were one people in some remote age and lived in one and the same country. That this country was not Egypt would appear from the fact that the Egyptians were not autochthonous in Egypt; but as they are said to have come from the Land of Punt, from which the Sun rises and proceeds on his journey westward, their

original home must have been in India on the Malabar Coast, which is situated towards the east of Egypt. We will notice below some other striking resemblances between the Egyptians and the ancient Aryans.

We have said that the bull which was sacred to Osiris, (Siva or Seb) and into which the soul of Osiris entered, was looked upon as Osiris himself, and the cow which was sacred to Isis, and with which she was identified, having been represented with horns on her head, was as much venerated as Isis herself. The bull and the cow thus came in to represent the Male and the Female Principles of creation respectively. These two Principles were, in course of time, still more emblematically represented in the male and the female organs of generation, the *Lingam* and the *Yoni* of the Hindus, the stone symbols of which are still to be found in every Sivaite temple of India.

It is customary both with European and Indian scholars to father the inauguration of these symbols on the Dravidians, and to trace their source to non-Aryan agency. But I have come across the word "Śiśnadevāh" in the Ṛgveda (vii. 21, 5), which referred to those Aryan tribes who worshipped the symbol of the male organ of generation. Of course, these Aryan tribes were hated by the Vedic Aryans for their mode of worship, and classed with the Rākṣasas or demons. But the fact stands out as incontrovertible that the worship of the *Lingam* existed in Ṛgvedic times in Sapta-Sindhu. It is very likely that this worship was carried by these tribes to Southern India where it was freely adopted by those who came in contact with them. The adoration of the generative organs as symbols of the creative powers of Nature is known by the name of Phallic worship. This worship is still widely prevalent in modern India; but it was also prevalent in ancient Egypt, and in fact in the whole ancient world. Richard Gough, in his *Comparative View of the Ancient Monuments of India* (London 1785), said: "Those

who have penetrated into the abstruseness of Indian Mythology find that in these temples was practised a worship similar to that practised by all the several nations of the world, in their earliest as well as their most enlightened periods. It was paid to the Phallus by the Asiatics;¹ to Priapus by the Egyptians, Greeks and Romans; to Baal-Peor by the Canaanites and idolatrous Jews. The figure is seen on the fascia which runs round the circus of Nismes and over the Cathedral of Toulouse and several churches of Bordeaux. M. d' Ancarville has written two large quarto volumes to prove phallic worship to be the most ancient idea of the deity."

"Originally" says the author of *Phallism* ² "Phallic worship had no other meaning than the allegorical one of that mysterious union between the male and the female, which throughout nature seems to be the sole condition of the continuation of the existence of animated beings. There is no reason whatever for supposing that licentiousness invented the rites incidental to the worship of Pan, Priapus, Bacchus and Venus whatever may have been made of them afterwards. 'It is impossible to believe,' said Voltaire, 'that depravity of manners would ever have led among any people to the establishment of religious ceremonies, though our ideas of propriety may lead us to suppose that ceremonies which appear to us so infamous could only be invented by licentiousness. It is probable that the first thought was to honour the deity in

¹ Phallus is the same as the Sanskrit *Phala*.

Some eighty years ago a writer in the *Edinburgh Review* "pointed out certain points of comparison between the Osiris in Egypt, and Bacchus in Greece under the emblem of Phallus. It is under the same emblem that he is still venerated in Hindoostan, and Phallus is one of the names in the Dictionary of *Amara Singha*. The bull was sacred to him in Egypt. Plutarch assures us that several nations of Greece depict Bacchus with a bull's head, and that when he is invoked by the women of Elis they pray him to hasten to their relief on the feet of a bull. In India, he is often seen mounted on a bull; hence one of his sacred names, *Vṛādhvaja*, signifying 'whose sign is the bull' " (*Phallism* p. 53. London 1889).

² *Phallism* (London) Privately printed. 1889. p. 10.

the symbol of life, and that the custom was introduced in times of simplicity.' "

Though the Phallic worship was widely prevalent in the ancient world, there is a striking resemblance between the two forms of worship as prevailed in ancient Egypt and India. Osiris and Isis are identical with Śiva and Śakti (*A-Sūrya* and *Uṣas* or *Sekhet*). In both the countries, the bull was sacred to Osiris or Śiva and the cow to Isis or *Uṣas* or *Umā*. "A circumstance occurred some years ago, which illustrates in a remarkable manner the similarity of Pagan systems which we have been alluding to, and as it is too well authenticated to admit of doubt, it is of particular value. It was this:— During the expedition into Egypt against the French, the Indian soldiers, who had been taken there by the Red Sea and Suez to assist in the work, recognized many of the mythological forms, especially the bull and some stone figures of serpents, as similar to what they had in their own country. They at once made this known to their officers, affirming that the people who formerly inhabited Egypt must have been Hindoos; and when they saw the temple of Hadja Silsili in a state of decay, they were filled with indignation that the natives should have allowed it to fall into such condition, as they conceived it to be the temple of their own god Śiva" ¹ This incident, though simple, strongly corroborates our view about the identity of Osiris with Śiva.

Students of Hindu Mythology know fully well that the Hindu Trinity is represented by the Sun, the morning Sun being looked upon as Brahmā, the Creator, the midday Sun as Viṣṇu or Hari (Egyptian Horus), the Preserver, and the setting Sun as Śiva or Hara (Egyptian Har,) the destroyer, covering the world with darkness, and wrapping all living creatures in deathlike torpor. Śiva is thus regarded as "the Sun of the night." This will enable us to clearly understand the following words of Diodorus:— "Some of the ancient Greek

¹ Phallism, London (1889) p. 54

Mythologists call Osiris Dionysus, and surname him Sirius. Some likewise set him forth clothed with the spotted skin of a fawn (called *Nebri*) from the variety of stars that surround him." ¹ Our readers will at once see that the word Dionysus corresponds to the Sanskrit word *Dinaṣa* (the sun) and the word Sirius to *Sūrya*. They will also understand why Śiva, in the Hindu Mythology, has a spotted leopard skin round his loins, which merely represents the starry sky that forms the robe of him who is *Digamvara* (or nude). It will also not be difficult for them to grasp the meaning of the description of Śiva as *Śaśimali*, i.e., having the moon on his forehead, because the moon appears just as the sun descends towards, or sinks below the horizon; or because, as the Egyptian Mythology says, the moon (*Vytra*) was triumphant over Osiris (the Sun of the night, or Śiva). The dark portion of the night (*Kāla-rātri* or *Kālī*) is one of the consorts of Śiva, represented as dancing her weird dance over the prostrate body of her husband, and fighting the demons or *Asuras*, who are the enemies of the *Devas*, i.e. the shining ones, congregated on the heaven probably in the shapes of stars and planets, and watching the terrific fight below. Isis was sometimes identified with the moon in the Egyptian Mythology, as she had horns on her head like those of the crescent moon. The moon-lit portion of the night was therefore another consort of Śiva, and she was called *Satī* in the Hindu Mythology. *Satī* was a daughter of *Dakṣa* *Prajāpati* of the family of *Brahmā*, the Creator, or the morning Sun, who invited all the *Devas* to his *Yajna* or sacrifice, excepting Śiva, his son-in law, apparently for no other reason than because Śiva being the Sun of the night, could not possibly be invited to attend a sacrifice held in the morning by the Morning Sun. The consort of Śiva, i.e. *Satī*, (the moon-lit night, or for the matter of that, the Moon), however, went to her father's *Yajna* uninvited, though Śiva repeatedly and emphatically protested against her attending the sacrifice thus unceremoniously,

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World* Vol. I. p. 279.

and the result was disastrous. The glorious Morning Sun, holding his court in all his splendor, took no notice of the poor daughter, and slighted, nay, insulted her ; and lo ! Sati, keenly feeling the sting of insult, neglect and humiliation, as only a loving and sensitive daughter could feel, paled before her father and suddenly died. Śiva, hearing of the tragic death of his beloved wife, became furious, destroyed the splendid sacrifice of Dakṣa, and in his mighty grief, roamed over the world, with the dead body of Sati flung across his shoulders.¹ The Devas fled in all directions, and in their distress, sought the help and advice of Viṣṇu or the Mid-day Sun, who with a view to avert a calamity, cut up the dead body of Sati with his *Cakra* or disc into pieces and flung them about. These cut-up pieces were represented in the different phases of the moon, lighted up by the solar rays. The third consort of Śiva was Haimavatī Umā or Durgā, *i.e.*, the Golden Dawn—another form of Isis, called Eos in Greek, and Uṣas in the Veda—who with her ten outspread arms was engaged in fighting and routing the demons of darkness. Durgā is represented as mounted on a lion, the most ferocious of the beasts of prey that prowls about in the night. The lion with his tawny colour, bushy manes, strength and ferocity is sometimes compared to the Sun (Hari). Durgā, Umā, Uṣas, or the Golden Dawn may be said to ride over the first rays of the Morning Sun, in all the splendours of her beauty.

The description of Osiris as given by Diodorus has naturally led me to explain the meaning of the corresponding Hindu myth about Śiva and his consorts. About Isis Diodorus says that the word "being interpreted, signifies Ancient, the name being ascribed to the moon from eternal generations." The

¹ The Moon on the fourteenth night of the dark fortnight rises just before sunrise, and immediately dies away. On the *Amdvayā* day clouds sometimes gather in the morning, darken the morning sun and spread gloom all around. This looks like the grief of Śiva on the death of his beloved consort whose dead body he flung across his shoulders and roamed over the world. Sati was re-born as Umā, or Uṣas (Dawn.)

Greek mythologists "add likewise to her horas, because her aspect is such in her increase and in her decrease, representing a sickle, and because an ox among the Egyptians is offered to her in sacrifice. They hold that these gods (Osiris and Isis) govern the whole world, cherishing and increasing all things, and divide the year into three parts (that is to say, spring, summer and autumn) by an invisible motion, perfecting their constant course in that time. And though they are in their nature very differing from one another, yet they complete the whole year with a most excellent harmony and consent. They say that these Gods in their natures do contribute much to the generation of all things, the one being of a hot and active nature, the other moist and cold, but both having some of the air, and that by these, all things are brought forth and nourished; and therefore that every particular being in the universe is perfected and completed by the sun and moon, whose qualities as before declared are five: (1) spirit of quickening efficacy, (2) heat or fire, (3) dryness or earth, (4) moisture or water and (5) air, of which the world does consist, as a man made up of head, hands, feet and other parts. These five they reputed for gods, and the people of Egypt, who were the first that spoke articulately, gave names proper to their several natures, according to the language they then spoke. And therefore they called the spirit Jupiter, which is such by interpretation, because a quickening influence is derived from this into all living creatures as from the original principle; and upon that account, he is esteemed the common parent of all things" ¹.

The above extracts at once recall to our mind some of the tenets of the Hindu Philosophy which, based on the R̥g-vedic cosmogony, admits of the existence of two principles in the universe, the Male and the Female—the Positive and the Negative—the Active and the Passive—the *Puruṣa* and the *Prakṛti* as they are called by the Hindu philosophers, from

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 279.

whose union the material world and all life have been produced. The five qualities mentioned by Diodorus are the five *Tatras* of Hindu Philosophy, or primordial elements, *vis. Kṣiti* (earth), *Ap* (water), *Tejas* (heat), *Marut* (air) and *Byom* (sky or ether), from a combination of which every thing has been created. It will thus be seen that the resemblance between the Hindu and the Egyptian philosophies is striking.

Diodorus further says : " Fire they (the Egyptians) called by interpretation Vulcan, and him they held in veneration as a great god, as he greatly contributed to the generation and perfection of all beings whatsoever.

" The Earth as the common womb of all production they called *Metera* (*cf. Sansk. Mātṛ*), as the Greeks in process of time by a small alteration of one letter, and an omission of two letters, called the Earth Demetra which was anciently called Gen Metera, or the Mother Earth.

" Water or Moisture, the ancients called Oceanus, which by interpretation, is a nourishing mother and so taken by some of the Grecians.

" To the Air they gave the name of Minerva, signifying something proper to the nature thereof, and called her the daughter of Jupiter, and counted a virgin, because the air naturally is not subject to corruption, and is the highest part of the Universe whence rises the fable that she was the issue of Jupiter's brain." ¹

" And these are the stories " continues Diodorus, " told by the Egyptians of the heavenly and immortal gods. And besides these, they say, there are others that are terrestrial, which were begotten of these former gods, and were originally mortal men, but by reason of their wisdom and beneficence to all mankind have obtained immortality, of which some have been kings of Egypt, some of whom by interpretation have

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 280.

had the same names with the celestial gods, others have kept their own names." ¹

This will explain why, besides the gods of the Egyptian hierarchy, were also kings and queens of the names of Osiris and Isis etc. who were regarded as demi-gods, and afterwards identified with the cosmic deities themselves. It is not at all unnatural for a people who had left their ancestral home and settled in a foreign country, to set up a new hierarchy after the names of the gods of the motherland, in order to reconcile themselves thoroughly to the condition of the country of their adoption. It was probably on this principle that their first great king may have been named Menes or Mena after the great Manu of their motherland, and sometimes identified with Osiris (the sun) himself, as Manu of India was regarded the offspring of the Sun and called *Vaivasvata*. In this connection, it should be noted here that the R̥gvedic Aryans also believed that some of their gods were originally men who on account of their piety, wisdom and beneficent exploits, were raised to the status of gods. For example, the *R̥bhus*, (Rv. i. 110, 2. 3 and the *Maruts* (Rv. x. 77, 2) were believed to have been originally men, who were afterwards transformed into Devas on account of their wonderful exploits and valorous deeds. This belief must have been taken to Egypt by the immigrants from India.

What with these striking resemblances and similarities in social customs and manners, religious dogmas and beliefs, and political life and institutions of the ancient Egyptians and the Indo-Aryans, what with the ancient tradition of the Egyptians themselves that their forefathers had come from the Land of Punt, "the dwelling of the Gods," what with the anthropological evidences, as adduced by Hæren and others, establishing a similarity between the skulls of the ancient Egyptians and the Indian races, what with the fact that the ancient names of the country and the great river that flows

¹ *Ibid.* Do. Do.

through it, as well as the names of the principal Egyptian deities can be satisfactorily traced to words of Sanskrit origin only, and what with the wonderful coincidence of the Egyptian with the Aryan Mythology, one is forced to the irresistible conclusion that a branch or branches of the Indo-Aryan race, or aryanised Dravidians, probably the Pāṇdyas, must have emigrated from India to Egypt in pre-historic times (as some other branches of the same race or races did to some of the neighbouring countries *vis.*, Phœnicia, Chaldea and Elam &c.) and finding the valley of the Nile fertile, secluded (*ā-gupta*), and secure from the invasion of enemies, settled there and founded a civilisation which was essentially Aryan, though greatly modified by surrounding influences. If this conjecture be correct, the theories about the age of the Indo-Aryan civilisation, as propounded by European *savants*, have to be reconsidered and recast in the light of the recent discoveries made in Egypt and Mesopotamia, and the revised readings of their ancient history. Menes was the first king to have established the Dynastic rule in Egypt about 4,400 B. C. and to have united under one rule the Red and White crowns which probably represented the two branches of the Solar (Red) Dynasty and the Lunar (White) Dynasty of the immigrant Indo-Aryans, constantly at war with one another and striving for supremacy in ancient Egypt as in ancient India. The emigrations of the Indo-Aryans, or aryanised Dravidians to Egypt must therefore have taken place long before the establishment of Dynastic rule by King Menes, that is to say, in the Dvāpara Yuga of the Hindus, and long before the battle of Kurukṣetra was fought in the plains of the Punjab. The Kali Yuga, according to the Hindus, commenced on the 20th February of 3,102 B. C. at 2 hours 27 minutes and 30 seconds, and the battle of Kurukṣetra was fought some time after this date.¹ The establishment of the Dynastic rule

¹ "According to the astronomical calculations of the Hindus, the present period of the world, *Kali-Yuga*, commenced 3,102 years before the birth of Christ on the 20th February at 2 hours 27 minutes and 30 seconds. They say

in Egypt by King Menes had therefore been effected some 1,300 years before the Kali Yuga commenced ; but even long before that event, the Indo-Aryan or the Dravidian immigration to Egypt had taken place. It is indeed extremely difficult to ascertain the exact period of time, when the Indo-Aryans or the Dravidians first immigrated to Egypt. But Diodorus says : " From (King) Osiris and (Queen) Isis to the reign of Alexander the Great, who built a city after his own name, the Egyptian priests reckon above ten thousand years, or (as some write) little less than three-and-twenty thousand years." ¹ If we accept the first of these two calculations, the first immigration of the Indo-Aryans or the aryanised Dravidians to Egypt may have taken place about 10,000 B.C., a supposition which would not seem improbable when we take into our consideration the fact that the sacrifice of bulls was a prevailing custom among the Egyptians, who must have taken it with them from India at a time when the custom was in vogue in that country. We find the custom discountenanced in the *Brāhmaṇas* and, therefore, may conclude that the immigration had taken place before these works came to be written. This also goes to prove the hoary antiquity of the Ṛgveda, as the hymns had been composed long before any land-communication was established, by the drying up of the Rajputana Sea and the formation of

that a conjunction of planets then took place, and their tables show this conjunction. Bailly states that Jupiter and Mercury were then in the same degree of the ecliptic, Mars at a distance of only eight, and Saturn of seven degrees ; whence it follows that at the point of time given by the Brahmins as the commencement of Kali Yuga, the four planets above mentioned must have been successively concealed by the rays of the Sun (first, Saturn, then Mars, afterwards Jupiter, and lastly Mercury). These then showed themselves in conjunction ; and although Venus could not then be seen, it was natural to say that a conjunction of the planets then took place. The calculation of the Brahmins is so exactly confirmed by our own astronomical tables that nothing but an actual observation could have given so correspondent a result." *Theogony of the Hindus* by Count Bjornstjerna.

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World* Vol. I. p. 285.

the Gangetic plains, between ancient Sapta-Sindhu and the Southern Peninsula. It must also have taken thousands of years to uplift the Dravidians from their savage condition, and impart to them the elements of Aryan civilisation, even after the Aryans founded colonies in the south. The tradition current among the Phœnicians that they had been in Phœnicia for 30,000 years before Alexander the Great invaded their country, and the belief of the Chaldean priests (probably Brāhmans) that their civilisation was nearly five hundred thousand years old, though these calculations seem to be highly exorbitant and cannot be relied upon, also point, as we have already said, to the vast antiquity of R̥gvedic civilisation. The calculation of the age of Indo-Aryan or Dravidian immigration to Egypt is indeed modest beside these calculations, and can be taken as probable. My surmise is that the first people to immigrate to Western Asia from India were the Pāṇis, the ancestors of the Phœnicians, then the Cholas from the Coromondal coast, and afterwards, the Pāṇdyas from the Malabar coast, who however instead of settling in Western Asia, or on the coasts of the Persian Gulf, which had already been occupied by the Cholas, immigrated directly to Egypt and founded a flourishing colony there.

It may be asked that if the Indo-Aryan civilisation was really so old, how is it that we cannot go back beyond at most three to four thousand years by computing the reigns of the kings whose list we find in the Purāṇas? The answer is simple. There having been no art of writing in ancient times, no chronicles were kept of the reigns of the kings who had flourished, and the names of such kings only as had distinguished themselves by their beneficent rules passed on from generation to generation in popular tradition. It was quite natural that people did not care to remember the names of kings whose reigns were not distinguished by wars or conquests, or any acts of popular good, and therefore were not worth remembering

at all. And as noble and great kings never flourished in quick succession, but appeared only once in a while probably at intervals of hundreds of years, their names were few and far between, as a matter of course. When writing came into vogue, an attempt was made to collect and arrange the names of those kings who figured in the popular tales, and a sort of connection was established between one king and another as father and son, though in reality they were separated from each other by a gap of several generations. The compilers themselves felt the difficulty, and sought to overcome it by assigning a fabulous number of years—some thousands of years, to each reign, which simply proved the very hopelessness of their task. The fact is that history in the truest sense of the word is a comparatively recent product, and cannot be older than seven or eight thousand years at most, and is probably synchronous with the invention and development of the art of writing. So far as ancient Sapta Sindhu was concerned, it was divided into a number of small states, in which the kings were more like leaders and patriarchs of the people than autocrats bent upon self-aggrandisement and making extensive conquests. The five tribes had a homogeneous development, and lived in peace and amity among themselves, combining together only on occasions of grave common dangers. Though they sometimes quarrelled among themselves, the quarrel never ended in a conquest, or permanent subjugation of one tribe by another, and "Live and let live" seemed to have been the one principle that guided them. "May you all be united in your endeavours; may your hearts beat in unison; may your minds not pull different ways, but, united, act in harmony" (Rv. x. 191, 4)—such was the inspiring prayer that was offered by a *R̥ṣi* who saw a higher vision of the purpose of life than the mere establishment of a mighty empire by physical conquest of the world. Their wars were only directed towards the elimination of the discordant elements from their community, that proved to be veritable clogs in the wheel

of their spiritual progress, and stood in the way of their consummating the *summum bonum* of life. As soon as this object was accomplished, they plunged again into contemplation, and developed such a civilisation, based on *satya* (truth) and *ṛta* (right), as has survived the ravages of time and is to last till the end of the world, or of the cycle of the human race. This was the spirit that dominated and guided the whole nation,—men, women and even children. There were of course occasional lapses and aberrations which are bound to occur in the course of the evolution and perfection of all human institutions, but these only served as fresh incentives to the nation to apply to the noble work with renewed and greater zeal. A nation guided by such noble ideals can have no history in the sense in which we understand the word; for nobody would care to record the ephemeral achievements or glorious conquests of kings, which by the way were regarded as so many obstacles to the spiritual evolution of the race, rather than things to be proud of. Hence we find the ancient Aryan kings, not in the rôle of leaders of conquering hordes, but as fathers of the people, protecting them from outside harm, and helping them to live a life of peace and contentment, which was conducive to their spiritual culture and the practice of *Dharma*, which literally means "that which upholds." And the Princes themselves were more ascetics than gorgeous personages rolling in luxury. The King was the wielder of the *Danda*—the sceptre,—which was emblematic of *Dharma*, keeping people on the path of *ṛta* (right), and which would destroy even the wielder himself, if he strayed out of the path. The history of the ancient Aryans consists of an elaborate account of ideal kings like Râma and Yudhiṣṭhira, of moral and spiritual heroes like Bharata, Lakṣmana, Bhīṣma and Arjuna, of noble and ideal Princesses like Sītâ, Sâvitri, Damayanti and Draupadi, of ascetic kings like Manu and Janaka, of sages like Vasiṣṭha, Viçvâmitra, Bharadvâja, Yâjñavalkya, Vyâsa and Vâlmiki, of truthful kings like Hariścandra and Daśaratha, of noble spiritual ladies like Maitreyi,

Viçvavārā, Lopamudrā, Anasayā and Gāndhārī, and of noble and virtuous persons of even low birth and rank like Vidura, Ekalavya, Dharmavyādha and Tulādhara. The names of all other persons, whether kings or princes, were consigned to the limbo of oblivion, as quite unnecessary, and unfit to be remembered or chronicled. If history merely means an account of kings in chronological order, and of their wars and conquests, the ancient Aryans have no history. But if it means an account of the *people*, as they lived and thought, of their hopes, aspirations and ideals, of an evolution of their civilisation working up to those ideals, of their many-sided activities in the domains of ethics, spiritual culture, philosophy, literature, arts and sciences, of well-ordered social and political institutions making for the evolution of the community as a whole as well as of the individual, of a constant struggle, both communal and individual, to live up to the highest ideal of true manhood, and of bold and determined efforts to solve the riddle of life that always stares one in the face like the mysterious Egyptian Sphinx, to grasp the destiny of humanity as a whole, and to realise oneself as a drop in the ocean of the Universal Ego, permeating the entire creation, physical and spiritual,—then, certainly, the Aryans have a history,—a history which is unique in the world, and unsurpassed by that of any people that ever flourished on our globe. The great Veda-Vyāsa in the early dawn of the Kaliyuga, some 5,000 years ago, compiled such a history in the *Mahābhārata*, the greatest work after the Four Vedas, which is aptly called the Fifth Veda (*Pañcama Veda*) and *Itihāsa* (history). Other sages followed him in his foot-step, and compiled the various *Purāṇas*, though all of them are fathered on Veda-Vyāsa. The compilation of these works was undoubtedly made possible only by the invention and development of the Brāhmī script which is the parent of the modern Sanskrit script, and owes its origin entirely to the genius of the Aryan race,—a script which is admittedly the most perfect of all scripts in the world.

It would thus appear that the absence of succinct chronological accounts of kings and their reigns in the sacred Scriptures of the ancient Aryans does not disprove the hoary antiquity of their civilisation. The *Mahābhārata* contains many traditions of the ancient Indo-Aryan race which, even at the time of Veda-Vyāsa, passed into the realm of myths and legends. Without trying to explain them, he carefully collected all the legends and traditions current in his time and preserved them in his great *Itihāsa*. There are many legends in the *Mahābhārata* relating to the emigrations made into foreign countries by some branches of the Indo-Aryan people, which admirably fit in with the tradition of the ancient Egyptians themselves that their forefathers had emigrated from the Land of Punt. It is recorded in the *Mahābhārata* that Garuḍa led the Nāgas or serpents (a nomadic Aryan tribe) out of India into a beautiful island where the latter settled. Garuḍa himself carried on war with the Devas, and aspired to be their lord, but Viṣṇu brought about a compromise by which Garuḍa submitted to the authority of the Devas, and acknowledged their supremacy, though not without first extorting a promise from Viṣṇu that he (Garuḍa) would always be perched over Viṣṇu's head! It is for this reason, says the legend, that Garuḍa always occupies a place on the top of Viṣṇu's chariot or throne. We find that the Egyptian God "Ra, the Sun, is usually represented as a hawk-headed man, occasionally as a man, in both cases generally bearing on his head the solar disk...Horus is generally hawk-headed, and thus a solar god connected with Ra."¹ The Assyrians also, as we have seen, had gods with the head and wings of an eagle. These facts will go to explain to a certain extent the Garuḍa myth of the Aryans. Besides the Garuḍas and the Sarpas or Nāgas, there were other nomadic Indo-Aryan tribes under the name of *Yāgyavarsas*. (Ilt. Wanderers). We have already said elsewhere that a sage of the

*Yāgyavara*s whose name was *Jaratkāru* married the beautiful sister of *Vāsuki*, the king of the *Nāgas*, and the issue of the union was the great sage *Astika*. From the legends to be found in the *Mahābhārata*, it would seem that there were constant feuds between the nomadic and the settled tribes of the Indo-Aryan race and that these feuds were continued for a long time and only put an end to by effecting a compromise, or by the nomadic tribes leaving the shores of India for good. It is also on record in the *Mahābhārata* that some of the sons of King *Yayāti* were banished by their father from the country on account of their disobedience and selfishness, and they became lords of the *Yavanas*, *Mlecchas* and other barbarian races. All these legends go to show that long before the *Mahābhārata* was composed, branches of the Indo-Aryan race had emigrated from India and settled down in other countries. We have seen in this chapter that a branch of this race or the aryanised *Pāṇdyas* very likely emigrated to Egypt and founded a flourishing empire which gave birth to the modern civilisation of Europe. A conjecture like this can only explain the striking resemblances in physical type, manners, social customs, and religious beliefs of two such widely separated peoples as the ancient Aryans and the ancient Egyptians.

The writer of the History of Egypt in the "Historians' History of the World" finds great difficulty in arriving at a satisfactory conclusion as to the origin of the ancient Egyptians, in as much as he notices their striking resemblances with the Indians in many important respects, and yet cannot bring himself to believe that they originally emigrated from India. His observations on the point are worth quoting here :—

"The ancients, beyond vaguely hinting at an Ethiopian origin of the Egyptians, confessed themselves in the main totally ignorant of the subject. And it must be confessed that the patient researches of modern workers have not sufficed fully to lift the veil of this ignorance. Theories have been

propounded, to be sure. It was broadly suggested by Heeren that one might probably look to India as the original cradle of the Egyptian race. Hebrew scholars, however, naturally were disposed to find that cradle in Mesopotamia, and some later archæologists, among them so great an authority as Maspero, believe that the real beginnings of Egyptian history should be traced to equatorial Africa. But there are no sure data at hand to enable us to judge with any degree of certainty as to which of these two hypotheses, if any one of them, is true.

"The whole point of view of modern thought regarding this subject has been strangely shifted during the last half century. Up to that time, it was the firm conviction of the greater number of scholars that, in dealing with the races of antiquity, we had but to recover some four thousand years before the Christian Era. Any hypothesis that could hope to gain credence in that day must be consistent with this supposition. But the anthropologists of the past two generations have quite dispelled that long current illusion, and we now think of the history of man as stretching back tens, or perhaps hundreds of thousands of years into the past.

"Applying a common-sense view to the history of ancient nations from this modified standpoint, it becomes at once apparent how very easy it may be to follow up false clews and arrive at false conclusions. Let us suppose, for example, that, as Heeren believed and as some more modern investigators have contended, the skulls of the Egyptians and those of the Indian races of antiquity, as preserved in the tombs of the respective countries, bear a close resemblance to one another. What, after all, does this prove? Presumably it implies that these two widely separated nations have perhaps had a common origin. But it might mean that the Egyptians had one day been emigrants from India, or conversely, that the Indians had migrated from Egypt, or yet again, that the forbears of both nations had, at a remote epoch, occupied some other region, perhaps in an utterly different part of the globe from

either India or Egypt. And even such a conclusion as this would have to be accepted with a large element of doubt. For up to the present it must freely be admitted that the studies of the anthropologists have by no means fixed the physical characters of the different races with sufficient clearness to enable us to predicate actual unity of race or unity of origin from a seeming similarity of skulls alone, or even through more comprehensive comparison of physical traits, were these available. More than this, any such comparison as that which attempts to link the Egyptians with the Indians or Hebrews or Ethiopians is, after all, only a narrow view of the subject extending over a comparatively limited period of time. If it were shown that the first members of that race which came to be known as Egyptians came to the valley of the Nile from India or Mesopotamia or Ethiopia, the fact would have undoubted historic interest, but it would after all only take us one step further back along the course of the evolution of that ancient civilisation, and the question would still remain an open one as to what was the real cradle of the race." ¹

The real cradle of the race, as we have taken pains to point out and prove in these pages, was India, and that of its civilisation ancient Sapta-Sindhu. Our readers have seen that I have not depended upon the evidence of a seeming similarity of skulls alone as established by Heeren and other scholars, to prove the common origin of, or a close connection between the ancient Aryans, or aryanised Dravidians, and the ancient Egyptians. The manners, social customs and institutions, and religious beliefs and observances of these two widely separated races had something of the family likeness in them which cannot fail to strike even the most critical mind as very remarkable. Add to this the Sanskrit origin of the names of the land, the river, and the gods, and the tradition of the ancient Egyptians themselves that they had originally come from the Land of Punt. Taking all these evidences and

¹ *Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, pp. 263-264.

circumstances into one's consideration, one cannot help feeling and concluding that the ancient Egyptians were original immigrants from India as were the Chaldeans of Mesopotamia and the Phœnicians of the Syrian coast. We have proved the hoary antiquity of Ṛgvedic civilisation, which goes back to geological times, at any rate, to the time when Sapta-Sindhu was entirely cut off from Southern India by a long stretch of sea extending from Assam to the coast of modern Gujrat, and when the entire Peninsula was peopled by wild savages little removed from the state of brutes. The very fact that the first Egyptian king Menes established the Dynastic rule about 4400 B. C., from which Egyptian history and civilisation really began, makes it absolutely impossible that the Egyptians could have emigrated from Egypt to India, and imparted their civilisation to the Aryans whose civilisation was probably several thousands of years old. Such a supposition would be absurd, not to say, ridiculous on the very face of it. The real fact was that when the whole world was steeped in utter darkness, the Ṛgvedic Aryans on the banks of the sacred Sarasvati and the Sindhu, and in the beautiful valley of Kashmir, lighted up the holy Fire of Civilisation and Spiritual Culture and kept it burning and glowing for thousands of years for the benefit of humanity. In a much later age, a few faggots were taken from this sacred and burning pile to other countries where they burned and glowed spasmodically for some time till they were finally extinguished, removed as they were from their original source. The ancient civilisations of Babylonia, Assyria, Phœnicia and Egypt are now mere names, and things of the past beyond all hopes of revival or resuscitation. It is only in India that the Ancient Fire still burns and glows on, and though blasts and dusts have done much to bedim its radiance, it will burn and glow again with its wonted lustre, if properly fed with such fuels and libations as are eminently fitted to keep it up, viz. a vivid realisation like that of the ancient Aryans of the one supreme end and purpose of life, the

direction of all thoughts, energies and actions towards the consummation of that supreme end, the simultaneous culture of the body, mind and soul, and the subordination of material culture to spiritual, the cultivation of catholicity, charity and toleration, the subordination of the self to higher good, the realisation of the divinity in man, irrespective of caste, creed or rank, the merging of the individual in the Universal Ego, the cultivation of the spirit of self-sacrifice for accomplishing communal good, and the development of that beatific vision that sees God in everything and everything in God—an all-round culture which is the special heritage of the Aryan race from their glorious ancestors who occupied the position of world-teachers, and vividly realised their own destiny. It was therefore not a mere vain boast that the great Manu indulged in, when he inspiringly declared: "From the first-born (the Brahmins) of this country let all the peoples of the Earth learn the guiding principles of their life and conduct" ¹—a boast which was partially fulfilled in the past, and waits to be completely fulfilled in the days to come.

¹ Manu, Ch. II, 20 :

एतदेव प्रसूतं यथावाचयिष्यमः ।

अ' अ' अदि' विचेत् इति वाचयिष्यमः ॥

CHAPTER XIV.

INDO-ARYAN INFLUENCE IN WESTERN ASIA.

We have traced in the previous chapters the unmistakable stamp of Aryan culture and civilisation on those of ancient Babylonia, Assyria, Phœnicia and Egypt. We have also shown that branches of the Iranians emigrated to Europe, and mixed with the Slavs, and that the main body of the tribe settled in Iran, Persia, or Parsua as it used to be called. The Iranians were "a fine vigorous type of humanity, living by agriculture and cattle-rearing, and skilled in the use of the spear and the bow. Horse-breeding, on which the tribes of Iran prided themselves, was assiduously pursued, and hunts in the mountains offered rich gains, and hardened the sinews of men for war. Other agricultural tribes were the Panthiæans and the Darusiæans, who probably dwelt further to the east, and the Germanians or Karmanians in the high-lands of Karman. The wilder parts of the mountains and the steppes and deserts of the coasts were occupied by predatory nomads, some of them very barbaric, the majority of whom must be ranked under the head of Persians. Such were the Mardans, the neighbours of the Elymæans (Elamites), Uxians (Persian Uvadza, now Chuzistan) and the Kossæans in the Zagros; the Sagartians (Persian Asagarta) in the central desert, the Utlans (Persian Jutija) in the Karmanian coast districts, and the Dropicians; the name Dahæ or 'robbers' is also found here, as in the Turanian steppe. These tribes no more constituted a political unity than did those of Media; divided among various districts, the peasants lived in patriarchal conditions under hereditary princes, and were continually at war with the robbers and nomads, while they were protected by the 'household gods' who sheltered from sterility and foes."¹

These Aryan robbers and nomads, some of whom were known as Dahæ (Sansk. *Dasyus* or robbers) had been, it should be remembered, the pests of Sapta-Sindhu, before they were driven out by the R̥gvedic Aryans. When the Iranians and other Aryan tribes emigrated from India, and settled in Persia, Media, Elam and other parts of Western Asia, these robbers proved as much pests to them as they had proved to the R̥gvedic Aryans in Sapta-Sindhu. The civilised Aryan settlers, however, managed to keep them away from their territories, and probably drove most of them westward until, further pressed forward by other civilised and more powerful tribes, they were compelled to pass out of Asia into Europe through the isthmus of Bosphorus. The route of march of these wild Aryan savages must have been along the southern coast of the Black Sea, through the ancient province known as *Pontus*, which is the same word as the Sanskrit *Panthā* meaning "highway." The mountains and forests of Media, Armenia, Pontus, Cappadocia, Galatia, Mysia and Lydia must have afforded them sufficient refuge and facility for hunting to induce them to hang about and tarry in those regions for a long time, until they were ousted from possession and pressed forward again by other more powerful tribes, leaving such residues in all the regions as chose to remain by adopting more civilised and peaceful ways of living. As the Mediterranean Sea barred their further progress westward, they naturally turned towards the north and went over to Europe, scattering themselves, along with other Asiatic nomads, east, west, north and south.

Of all the Aryan tribes that were compelled to leave Sapta-Sindhu, and passed westward, "the Persians were the first Aryans to achieve a great world empire within historic times. With them the Aryan race became dominant in the Western world, and it has so continued to the present time. The Persians themselves maintained the first place among the nations only for about two centuries, or from the time of

Cyrus until the Asiatic conquest of Alexander the Great. And the sceptre which they laid down was taken up by Western nations akin to them in speech, and passed on from one to another people of the same great Indo-Germanic race throughout the two and a half millenniums which separate the time of Cyrus from our own. But it is not only because of their kinship with European nations that the Persians are of interest. Their history has intrinsic importance. Theirs was unquestionably the mightiest empire the world had seen, since secure history began. It extended from India on the east to the extreme confines of Asia in the west and the north-west, and beyond them to include Egypt. It even threatened at one time, through the subjugation of Greece, to invade Europe as well, and numberless writers have moralised on the great change of destiny that would have fallen to the lot of Western civilisation, had their threat been made effective. All such moralising of course is but guess-work, and it may be questioned whether most of it has any validity whatever. For the truth seems to be that the Persians were much more nearly akin to the European intellect than a study of their descendants of recent generations would lead one to suppose. It is everywhere conceded that they sprang from the same stock, and their most fundamental traits show many points of close resemblance."¹

It should be remembered, however, that the great Persian Empire flourished after the kingdoms of Babylonia, As-yria, Phœnicia and Egypt had declined. It would therefore be wrong to suppose that they were the first to achieve greatness in the line of building empires or developing a world civilisation. But it must be conceded that the extent of their empire and power was greater than that of the ancient Babylonians, Assyrians or Egyptians, and that, while these nations were mixed peoples, the ancient Persians were undoubtedly of pure Aryan descent. The great Emperor Darius who ascended

¹ *Ibid.*, Vol. II, p. 565.

the throne of Persia about 521 B. C. described himself with pride not only as a Persian but "an Aryan of Aryan race." Such, at any rate, is the inscription on his tomb.

But more than 1000 years before the flourishing of the Persian Empire, other powerful and enterprising Aryan tribes had appeared in Western Asia from Sapta-Sindhu directly, as is evidenced by the names of the Gods whom they worshipped and invoked and who were the identical deities worshipped by the Vedic Aryans themselves. Such Aryan tribes were the Mitanni, the Kassians, the Hittites or Khetas, the Phrygians and others. "The kingdom of Mitanni," says Rogers, "must take its place among the small states which have had their share in influencing the progress of the world, but whose own history we are mabl trace." This kingdom was situated to the north-west of the kingdom of Babylonia and west of Assyria, between the Tigris and the Euphrates in their upper courses. It was called Naharain by the Egyptians, and Aram-Naharain in the Bible. Tehutimes I of Egypt reached this kingdom about 1580 B. C. during his Asiatic campaign, and in a battle fought on the borders, the king of Mitanni was defeated. Tehutimes erected a stele on the Euphrates to mark the limits of his dominion or rather conquest, and then turned back, richly laden, to Thebes. From this time forth, there was constant intercourse between the Nile and the Euphrates. In 1522 B. C. Tehutimes III extended his conquest as far as Mitanni which was made tributary to Egypt.

From the Tel-el-Amarna letters we know that between the years 1470 B. C. and 1400 B. C. there reigned in Mitanni four kings whose names were Artatana, Artasuma, Sutarna and Dashratta, the last name resembling the Sanskrit word *Daśaratha*. The other names also bear a close resemblance to Sanskrit. Hugh Winckler discovered in 1909 at Boghaz Keui, situated in Cappadocia, a clay tablet containing the terms of a treaty made by the king of Mitanni, in which the Vedic Gods Mitra-Varuna, Indra, and the Nāsatyas (the twin

Açvins) were invoked.¹ Mitra-Varuṇa have been mentioned together in the clay tablet, as in the Ṛgveda. Indra, as our readers know, was the principal Vedic deity who, however, was discarded by the Iranians. The word Nāsatiyas used to be pronounced by the Iranians as Nāhatyas. It would, therefore, appear that the Mitannians were a branch of the Vedic Aryans, and not of the Iranians, and they must have emigrated to Western Asia directly from Sapta-Sindhu, where alone, as is admitted by all scholars, the Vedic religion had its birth. When did this emigration take place, it is very difficult to ascertain; but it may have been accomplished long before the powerful Assyrian kingdom, which was situated just to the east of Mitanni, flourished. It is admitted by archæologists that Nineveh, the capital of Assyria, was in existence in 3,000 B. C., and the early rulers appear to have been subject priest-princes of the kings of Babylonia.

The Mitannians made alliances with the Kossæans and the Hittites to resist the invasion of the Egyptian kings about 1,400 B. C. The power of the Hittites at this time became formidable. They threatened the Egyptian provinces in Syria and the Mitannians were instrumental in driving the Egyptians from the land of the Amorites.

During the period of Egyptian subjection of Mitanni, its kings gave their daughters in marriage to some of the kings of the XVIIIth Dynasty of Egypt. Tihutimes IV married a Mitannian Princess. His successor Amenhotep III married a wife of foreign origin and religion, named Thi. He also married Gilukhipa (or Kirgipa), daughter of the king of Mitanni. It was Tihutimes IV who, probably under the influence of his Mitannian wife, discarded the Great Sphinx and restored the old cult of Horemkhu ("The sun in the two horizons"). His successor, Amenhotep III, who, as we have said, also married a Mitannian Princess, brought to Thebes the religion of Aten, the solar disk, and in the tenth year of

his reign, inaugurated a festival at Karnak in honour of the new religion. And his successor, Amenhotep IV, to free himself from the power of the high priest at Thebes, determined to have a new capital for his kingdom, for which Aten should be the supreme God. The religion of Aten was probably the most ancient form of the religion of Ra. The disk before which protestations were made was not only the shining and visible form of the divinity, it was the God himself. For the introduction of this new religion, the last kings of this Dynasty were distinguished by the name of "Heretic kings." It is believed by Rogers that this change of religion in Thebes was brought about by the influence of the Mitannian Princesses.¹ The Mitannians having been the worshippers of Vedic Gods, the predilection of the Princesses for the worship of the Sun and the establishment of a pure religion would be most natural.

The Kossæans or Kassites (Kasshu) were another Aryan tribe who inhabited the mountains of Zagros in Elam, which was situated to the east of ancient Babylonia and the south of Persia or Iran. In about 1800 B. C. the last Sumerian king of Babylonia was defeated, and Babylonia conquered by the Kassites or Kossæans under Kandish (Gandis) or Gaddas, who established a dynasty which lasted for 576 years and nine months. "Under the foreign domination, Babylonia lost its empire over Western Asia. Syria and Palestine became independent, and the high priests of Asshur made themselves kings of Assyria. The divine attributes with which the Semite kings of Babylonia had been invested disappeared at the same time; the title of 'god' is never given to a Kassite sovereign. Babylon, however, remained the capital of the kingdom, and the holy city of Western Asia. Like the sovereigns of the Holy Roman Empire, it was necessary for the Prince who claimed rule in Western Asia to go to Babylon and there be acknowledged as the adopted son of Bel before

¹ R. W. Rogers' *History of Babylonia and Assyria*, Vol. I, p. 110.

his claim to legitimacy could be admitted. Babylon became more and more a priestly city, living on its ancient prestige and merging its ruler into a pontiff. From henceforth down to the Persian era, it was the religious head of the civilised east."¹

Some later Kossæin kings of Babylonia, *vis*, Kadashman Bel and Burna-buriash I corresponded with the Egyptian Pharaohs, Amenhotep III and Amenhotep IV (1400 B. C.). The Assyrian king, Asshur-Uballit, still owed allegiance to his Babyloniansuzerain, and intermarriages took place between the royal families of Assyria and Babylonia. The latter, moreover, still sought opportunities of recovering its old supremacy in Palestine, which the conquests of the XVIIIth Dynasty had made an Egyptian province, and along with the Mitannians and the Hittites, intrigued against the Egyptian government with disaffected conspirators in the west. The Kossæin dynasty came to an end in 1230 B. C., after which the Assyrian kings became the masters of Babylonia.

It would thus appear that the Kossæins played a great part in the ancient history of Western Asia. That they were pure Aryans from Sapta-Sindhu is proved by the names of their principal deities, *Suryas* (the Sun) and *Maruttas* (*Maruts*, or the winds). Their language also bore a strong resemblance to Sanskrit, and the Kossæin kings described themselves in the inscriptions as Kharis or Aryas.

"There is little doubt" says Mr. H. R. Hall in his *Ancient History of the Near East* (p. 201) "that the Kassites (Kossæins) were Indo-Europeans, and spoke an Aryan tongue. Their chief god was *Suryash*, the sun, the Indian *Sūrya* and Greek *Hycos*; their word for 'god' was *bugash*, the Slav *bogu*, and Phrygian *bagaios*. The termination *ash* which regularly appears at the end of their names is a nominative, corresponding to the Greek—*os* (*cf.* Sansk. *as* or *su*). Such a name

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. I, p. 304.

as Indabugash is clearly Aryan. They were evidently the advance-guard of the Indo-European southern movement which colonized Iran and *pushed westward to the borders of Asia Minor*. In the north the kingdom of Mitanni was about this time established between the Euphrates and Tigris by Aryans who must have been of the same stock as the Kassites who conquered Babylonia. The names of the kings of Mitanni which are known to us in later times are Aryan, and among the gods of Mitanni we find the Indian Varuṇa, Indra, and the Nāsatya twins (Aśvins).” All this goes clearly to show that the Kassites as well as the Mitannians were direct immigrants from India where the Vedic gods had been worshipped from time immemorial, and the Vedic hymns composed in a far earlier age. My surmise is that the dispersion of these Aryan tribes took place after the battle of Kurukṣetra that had been fought about 2,500 B. C., and had made the Kṣatriya race nearly extinct in India. Those that survived this general ruin migrated towards the west and settled in various parts of Asia Minor, founding powerful kingdoms, and maintaining their national and tribal characteristics for a long time. But afterwards they were gradually absorbed by the Semites, and the only relics of their once having belonged to the great Aryan race are now to be found in their statues, writings on bricks and engravings on stones and monuments, and in the names of their kings and gods.

The Hittites, who lived in a region to the north-west of Mitanni, and the north of Phœnicia, were probably also a branch of the Aryan race, though European scholars are not agreed as to who they were, and whence they came. That they were a non-Semitic race is, however, admitted by all.

“The Peninsula of Asia Minor is so situated geographically that it is the only highway between Asia and Europe, much as Palestine is the highway between Asia and Africa. The peoples which inhabited it were therefore necessarily, in some sense, a buffer between the great nations of the two

continents. For the most part, the role they played, at any rate in later history, was a comparatively insignificant one. It is becoming more and more evident that there was a time in ancient history—using the term in the ordinary or relative sense—when the people who inhabited Asia Minor, took a foremost rank among the nations of their time as a warlike and conquering race.....They are vaguely referred to in the Bible records as descendants of Heth, son of Canaan, the son of Hem, and they are mentioned as one of the seven Canaanite tribes, but no one now-a-days ascribes great historical importance to these Hebrew records.”¹

It appears that the Hittites were one of the most powerful and warlike of ancient nations. The Egyptians called them Khetas, and the Assyrians Khattis. From their very warlike character and their name, it seems to me that they were originally an Aryan tribe, belonging to the caste of Kṣatriyas, and Khatti, Kheta, or Hittite were merely corrupted forms of the original Sanskrit word. That they were a very powerful people would appear from the fact that “several centuries before our era, the Hittites founded a powerful empire in Western Asia, probably with outlying provinces in Africa, and even in Europe as far west as Italy. The greatness of this nation we are able to conjecture from the numerous references made to it in the Bible and Egyptian history, and from the mighty monuments of its power that still exist. The carved figures on these monuments and the representations given by the Egyptians *prove the Hittites to have been of an altogether different physical type from the Semites, and, therefore, of a different race*; but their origin has not been clearly determined.”²

From their language also they appear to have been a non-Semitic tribe. It is held by scholars that their language was “characteristic and more sharply defined from any

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World* Vol. II, p. 391.

² *Ibid*, p. 393

known contemporary tongue, and though the point is not yet as fully established as might be wished, it is thought that the evidence in hand justifies the conclusion that the Hittites were not a Semitic race. It has been even suggested that they had Mongoloid affinities. If such was the case, the Hittites were related rather to the people of the north and north-east,—to the Scythians, perhaps even to the Chinese—than to their neighbours of the south. But all these questions must await the results of future investigations. For the moment, the Hittites are only just beginning to be revealed to us as a great conquering nation of Western Asia, who at one time rivalled the Egyptians and the Mesopotamians, but the memory of whose deeds had almost altogether faded from the minds of later generations.”¹

The figures of the sculptures left by the Hittites are always represented as wearing a peculiar form of shoe with upturned toe, a form which appears typical of India. They are also credited with having invented a hieroglyphic script of absolutely independent origin. But as yet very little progress has been made towards the decipherment of this new form of writing.

The Hittites were obstinate fighters, and put up a tough fight against Pharaoh Tehutimes III and Seti. But they are memorable in Egyptian history because of the great battle of Kadesh, their city on the Orontes, in which Ramses II so distinguished himself. The feats of Ramses are described in an Egyptian war-poem which is still extant under the name of “The war-poem of Pentaur.” A treaty of peace, however, was concluded by Ramses with the Khatti King, Khatusil (Sanskrit, *Kṣatra-sri* ?) or Khatasar, which word may be a corruption of the Sanskrit word *Kṣatresvara*, the lord of the Kṣatriyas. The text of the treaty has been discovered in an inscription on the temple of Karnak, in which the name *Sutekh*, the supreme god of the Kheta, who

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol II., p. 397.

was lord of heaven and earth, has been mentioned. Sutekh was probably a corrupted form of the Sanskrit word Śatakratu, which was a name of Indra.

It will be recalled that an alliance was formed by the Hittites with the Mitannians and the Kossæans against the Egyptians. This alliance was made by these peoples probably in consequence of their natural affinity in race. The Scythians were an extremely barbarous and cruel people, mostly addicted to a nomadic life. It is not at all likely from the advanced state of the civilisation of the Hittites that they belonged to that race. The figures on the Hittite sculptures also do not resemble the Mongoloid type or the Chinese. The probability, therefore, is that they were Aryans. Further investigations into their early history may lead to the establishment of the truth of this hypothesis.

It may be mentioned here that the Hittites worshipped Mâ (the Universal Mother) and Attis (Vedic *Atri*, or the Sun), and probably also Mithras (Vedic *Mitra*), and Mên, the moon (Iranic Mâo). All these gods must have been introduced from India or Iran. These deities, however, are not mentioned in the list of the Hittite gods in the Treaty of Ramses II with Khattusil or Khataras. On the rocks of the shrine of Yasili Kayâ are found the sculptured figures of "a goddess, Cybele or Mâ, standing upon a lion as she does on the coins of Greek and Roman times, and wearing upon her head a turreted head-dress.....Behind her is a youthful war-god, armed with an axe, and also mounted upon a lion, who accompanies her, as the young god does the goddess on Cretan seals. He must be Attis." At Yasili Kayâ and at Malâtiya "the Hittite deities" says Mr. H. R. Hall in his *Ancient History of the Near East* (p. 331) "are often accompanied by animals in quite Indian fashion, and sometimes stand upon them. This was a peculiarity, characteristic of Anatolian iconography down to the latest times. *It may be that it was a feature borrowed from Aryan religion.*"

Mr. Hall would have been more correct in saying that it was brought by the Hittites themselves direct from Aryan India. The Hittites had a male god in the form of a bull, and a female god in the form of a lioness, and the deities were sometimes represented as riding on them. In an old coln of Ancient Syria (which belonged to the Hittites) are found the figures of a goddess mounted on a lion, and of a god mounted on a bull. These figures undoubtedly resemble those of the god Śiva and the goddess Durgā of the Hindu Pantheon of the Paurāṇic age. If the Hittites came from India, they must have done so at an age when the Vedic religion gave away to the Paurāṇic, and Śiva and Durgā were the popular deities in that land. The first historical mention of the Hittites or the Khatti occurs about 1750 B. C., when they invaded Babylon in the reign of king Samsuditana, and the Hittite kingdom lasted till 1100 B. C. If this was the Paurāṇic age in India, how old and early must have been the R̥gvedic age, and how absurd would be the computation of that age by European and American scholars, who have put it down at 1000 B. C., or at most 1500 B. C. !

The Phrygians who lived in the centre of Asia Minor were admittedly an Aryan tribe. Phrygia is a country of many mountains and numerous river valleys. The fertility of the latter was always remarkable, and in the northern boundaries, at the sources of the river Sangarius, wide stretches of pasture land afforded nourishment for sheep. Grapes also were extensively cultivated.

“The ancient Phrygians were an agricultural people, and the strange rites of their religious worship all had reference to the renewal and decay of Nature. The ‘Phrygian mother’ who was called by the Greeks Rhea or Cybele, and whose name in the Phrygian language is said to have been Ammā, had her temple at the foot of mount Agdus, near Pessinus, where she was served by hosts of priests. She was

worshipped in the temple under the guise of a formless stone, said to have fallen from heaven, and was conceived of as driving over the mountains in a chariot, and wearing a crown of towers over her head. The beloved of Cybele was Attys, and the festivals of his birth and death were celebrated with wild grief and frantic joy, and accompanied by barbarous and unlovely rites, much like those of the worship of Adonis at Byblus. Cybele represents nature, or nature as the producer of life, and the birth and death of Attys typify the spring and autumn of the years "1

Now it would appear that *Ammā*, the name of the "Phrygian mother," is equivalent to the Sanskrit word *Ambā* which means "mother." Cybele was the same as the Vedic goddess *Prithi* ३ (Earth) or *Cybele* as she used to be called by the Lydians, another ancient Aryan tribe of Asia Minor. Attys is no other than *Atri* who has been described in the R̥gveda (v. 40, 7) as a friend of the Sun whom he released from the clutches of *Svarbhānu* (Eclipse). There are many legends in connection with Atri in the R̥gveda, one of which is that the Asuras confined him in a torture-house having one hundred doors and lighted up a fire, fed and kept alive by chaffs of corn as fuel, with the object of torturing him. It was the Aṇvins, however, who extinguished the fire by pouring water upon it, and released Atri. (Rv. i. 100, 8). This Atri in the fiery torture-house was undoubtedly the summer-sun, and his sufferings during the three hot months only came to an end when the rains began to fall, thereby cooling the atmosphere. That Cybele or Cybebe was Mother Earth is undoubted, as she was represented by a shapless meteoric stone that fell from heaven. Cybele was, therefore, identified with the sky as well as *Terra firma* or hard earth. We have a whole Śakta in the R̥gveda (v. 84) in praise of the goddess *Prithivī* who has been identified both with *Antarikṣa* (the sky) as well as the Earth. The beloved of

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. II, p. 414.

Cybele *i.e.*, Earth or Nature was Attys or the Sun in the Phrygian land. When winter came, and the power of the Sun declined, the aspect of Nature became dejected and mournful; but when the Sun gained power again in spring and summer, Nature became enlivened with fresh foliage and flowers, and joyous with the songs of birds. These were the occasions of the festivals among the Phrygians—festivals of grief and joy respectively.

Bagaïos was the name of the supreme God of the Phrygians, and this God is the same as the Vedic God Bhaga, and the Avestic God of the same name. In the Slavonic languages also Bogu denotes the supreme deity. "The Armenians," says Dr. Isaac Taylor "are believed to have been an eastern extension of the Phrygians, who themselves have been identified with the Briges of Thrace. Thus of the few Phrygian words which we possess, Bagaïos, the Phrygian name of the Supreme God, is the Iranian Bhaga, and the Slavonic Bogu. Hence we may conjecture that Phrygian and Thracian might supply some of the missing links between Greek, Armenian, Slavonic and Iranian."¹

Herodotus says that the Egyptians regarded the Phrygians to be the oldest people in the world; but the Greeks thought that they came from Thrace and were originally called Brigians. The Phrygians, however, while owning the relationship to the Brigians of Thrace, declared themselves to be the older people. And probably they were right. Modern writers are disposed to attribute an Armenian origin to both races. But whether the Phrygians were of Armenian origin or not, there can be no doubt that they had a racial affinity with them as with the Iranians also. This establishes a continuous link of the Aryan race along the "high way" between Asia and Europe. The Phrygians must have been a branch of the Brjis of the *R̥gveda*, some of whom probably settled in Asia Minor as Phrygians, while

¹ Taylor's *Origin of the Aryans*, p. 267.

others crossed over to Europe and settled in Thrace under the name of Briges. "There are indications which serve to show that the Phrygians once extended their rule over a much wider area than that assigned to their country in our maps of the ancient world; that they held command of the sea-board, and were even found beyond the Ægean."¹ This shows Aryan expansion over Europe. The Slavs, as we have elsewhere said, were probably a branch of the Iranians who, in the course of their wanderings westward from Airyana Vaejo most likely under the leadership of Yima, in the interglacial epoch, left residues on the line of their march through Armenia, Phrygia, Lydia, and other provinces of Asia Minor, and through Thrace in Europe, till they settled in North Russia. They could not have marched through the steppes of Central Asia, which were in ancient times covered by a large sea, and probably did not exist in those times.

Another Aryan people were the Lydians who, after the disappearance of the Hittites, attained a degree of prominence that makes them an object of particular interest to the present-day student of ancient history. "As to the origin of the Lydians and their early history, all is utterly obscure. It is not even very clearly known whether they are to be regarded a Semitic, Aryan or Turanian race; most likely they were a mixed race, and owed to this fact the relative power which they attained."²

Tradition ascribes to them three dynasties of kings, which are commonly spoken of as the Attyadæ, Heraclidæ and the Mermnadæ. The first of these dynasties is altogether mythical, and the second very largely so. Under the Mermnadæ, Lydia became a maritime as well as an inland power. They conquered some of the Greek cities, and the coast of Ionia was included within the Lydian kingdom. Under the great Cræsus, the Lydian kingdom became a Lydian empire,

¹ *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. II, p. 414.

² *Hist. Hist. of the World*, Vol. II p. 421.

and all Asia Minor westward of the Halys, with the exception of Lycia, owned the supremacy of Sardis, the capital of Lydia, which never again sprang back into its original dimensions.

"The language, so far as can be judged from its scanty remains, was Indo-European, and was more closely related to the western than to the eastern branch of the family. The race was probably a mixed one consisting of aborigines and *Aryan immigrants*. It was characterised by industry and a commercial spirit, and before the Persian conquest, by bravery as well."¹

"The religion of the Lydians resembled that of the other civilised nations of Asia Minor. It was a Nature-worship, which at times became wild and sensuous. By the side of the supreme god Medeus stood the sun-god Attys, as in Phrygia, the chief object of the popular cult. He was at once the son and bridegroom of Cybele or Cybebe, the mother of the gods....Like the Semitic Tammuz or Adonis, he was the beautiful youth who had mutilated himself in a moment of frenzy or despair, and whose temple was served by eunuch priests. Or again, he was the dying sun-god, slain by the winter, and mourned by Cybebe, as Adonis was by Aphrodite in the old myth which the Greeks had borrowed from Phœnicia."²

Cybebe became "the mother of Asia," and at Ephesus, where she was adored under the form of a meteoric stone, was identified with the Greek Artemis, "The priestesses by whom she was served were depicted in early art as armed with the double-headed axe, and the dances they performed in her honour with shield and bow gave rise to the myths which saw in them the Amazons, a nation of woman-warriors.....The prostitution whereby the Lydian girls gained their dowries

¹ *Ibid*, Vol. II p. 424.

² *Ibid*, p. 424.

was a religious exercise as among the Semites, which marked their devotion to the goddess Cybele."¹

In the above extracts, we can easily identify Medeus, the supreme god of the Lydians, with the early Vedic god *Mitra*, and Attys, the Phrygian and Lydian sun-god, with *Atri*. We have already identified Cybebe with *Prithivī* or Nature, and Cybebe was both the mother and wife of *Atri*, Attys or the sun, just as *Sūrya* in the Ṛgveda has been described as both the husband and son of *Uṣas*. It was from primordial Nature that the sun was produced, and it was through the power of the sun that Nature produced flowers and fruits,—in other words, became fruitful. As regards the eunuch priests who served the Lydian god Attys, there is a strange coincidence of this story with a Vedic myth which is worth mentioning here. In Rv. v. 78, we find the story of a *Ṛṣi* of the name of *Sapta-Vadhri* (lit. seven-eunuch) who was a son of Atri and whose brothers used to lock him up in a wooden chest every night, thereby preventing him from coming in contact with his wife. The *Ṛṣi*, on account of this forced separation from his wife, became very much dejected and care-worn, and prayed to the Aśvins, the divine physicians, to release him from his imprisonment. It is needless to say that the Aśvins did listen to his prayer and release him, thereby enabling him to meet his wife.

Now it is perfectly reasonable to call the sun a eunuch, when he loses his powers in winter. As Nature wears a dismal look in this season, the trees being stripped of foliage, flowers and fruits, she may be said to be reduced to the same condition as that of a young woman who is separated from her beloved. The sun in winter was therefore compared to a eunuch, or as the Lydians thought, was served by eunuch priests (*Sapta-Vadhri*). Hence arose the practice of employing eunuchs as priests in the temple of Attys. Lucian says: "The priests are self-mutilated men, and they wear women's

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 424.

garments." As regard Cybele or Cybebe, it was thought necessary to guard her during her forced separation from her husband, not by man-warriors but by female-warriors. Hence probably arose the necessity of having her served by priestesses who were also warriors. This practice of employing female warriors as priestesses in the temple of Cybebe was the origin of the tribe of Amazons of ancient legend. As regards the religious practice of the Lydian girls prostituting themselves before marriage, it was, as we have seen, an old Babylonian custom which was probably imitated by the Lydians.

The chief town of Lydia was Sardis, which was famous in ancient times as the principal mart of the east and the west. *Sardis* in Lydian originally meant "year" and the word can be identified with the Vedic word *Sarad* which also means "a year." The Homeric word "Hyde" may be a corruption from the word "Sardis." There was a town in Lydia called "Asia," and the continent of Asia took its name either from this town or from Asies, a Lydian hero. This legendary hero was connected with Attys by some sort of relationship, and we are disposed to think that he was none other than the Vedic *Aśvins* who released Saptā-Vadhri, the son of Atri, from his forced confinement. It was quite natural for the Lydians to honour this legendary hero or god, by founding a town in his name. Strabo reports that there was shown by the side of the river Cayster on the route from Ephesus to Sardis a building dedicated to the hero Asies. This was probably the site of the town of Asia, from which the continent took its name.

"The Lydian Empire may be described as the industrial power of the ancient world. The Lydians were credited with being the inventors, not only of the games such as dice, buckle-bones, ball, but also of coined money. The oldest known coins are electrum coins of the earlier Mermnads, stamped on one side with a lion's head, or the figure of a king

with bow and quiver."¹ It should be noted here that the Vedic Aryans were extremely fond of the game of dice, and the Lydians only brought this game as well as the art of coining metals from India. These coins were of a particular measure, and called *minas* which, as we have already elsewhere pointed out, was a corrupted form of the Vedic word *manā*.

The Lydians were Śiśnadevas or worshippers of *lingam*. "Phallic emblems for averting evil were plentiful; even the summit of the tomb of Alyattes is crowned with an enormous one of stone about 9 ft. in diameter"² It is still a custom with the Hindūs to erect a *lingam* over the ashes of a distinguished person, covered over with a conical temple.

From the above brief account of the ancient Lydians, it would appear that they were originally an ancient Aryan tribe from Sapta-Sindhu, but they afterwards commingled with the aborigines and the Semitic races, which helped to destroy the purity of their race and religious faith.

We thus see that the influence of Aryan culture in Western Asia was great, and that many Aryan tribes in the different stages of civilisation emigrated from India to Western Asia and settled down in various regions, establishing kingdoms and empires. Those that were in a savage state were pushed forward by the more powerful tribes following them until they were compelled to disperse over Europe. We shall try now to find out how this dispersion was effected. It should, however, be noted here that the savage Aryan tribes who were nomads and lived by the chase were the first to wander out of their original home in Sapta-Sindhu. They were probably in a rudimentary stage of development, and though they might have learnt the use of metals while in Sapta-Sindhu, they forgot it as soon as they left the country, not having learnt the process of manufac-

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 433.

² *Ibid.*, p. 434.

turing them like their advanced brethern. They had certain common words with the other Aryan tribes to express family relationship like father, mother, brother and sister, to describe animals like the ox, the cow, the dog, the sheep, and the horse (Vedic *aruṣa*), and natural objects like the sun, the sky, the earth, and water and tree, but they had no culture-words like those of the advanced tribes for no other reason than because they had no culture to speak of. With this scanty stock of words and a rude speech to express their thoughts and primitive culture, they roamed about for centuries, nay thousands of years in Western Asia, before they were compelled to scatter themselves over Europe. These migrations must have taken place long before Babylonia and Egypt flourished and the Semites made their appearance in Western Asia, so that when the highly developed Aryan civilisation was planted in Mesopotamia and Egypt, the Aryan nomads who had passed into Europe still remained in their primitive condition, and early rude stage of development. We shall now write about the spread of Aryan civilisation in Europe.

**State Central Library,
Govt. of West Bengal,
84-A, B. T. Road, Calcutta-700030**

